

# **The Blood of the Everlasting Covenant**

by Larry Chkoreff

Version 3.21  
ISBN 978-0-9676731-8-9  
Updated Summer 2011

Copyright © 2004 by Larry Chkoreff  
Published by International School of the Bible (ISOB), Marietta,  
Georgia, U.S.A.

This material is the sole property of the author. It may be reproduced freely, but only in its entirety for free circulation, without charge and with the permission of the author or publisher. It may not be altered without the express written consent of the author or publisher. It may not be altered or edited in any way. This material may not be used without the permission of the author for resale or the enhancement of any other product sold.

For information on reproducing this book contact ISOB at:  
Email address – [bloodcovenant@isob-bible.org](mailto:bloodcovenant@isob-bible.org)  
The ISOB web site is [www.isob-bible.org](http://www.isob-bible.org).

Unless otherwise indicated, all Scripture quotations are taken from the New King James Version Bible Copyright © 1982 by Thomas Nelson, Inc.. When quoted by verse with numbers, the original quote marks were left in place without editing.

Cover art by Tracey Diaz.

## Forward

In 1 Corinthians 1:18-2:5 the Apostle Paul said that he would preach only the Cross and that he would not use eloquent words of worldly wisdom. He indicated that the power was in the Cross, or in the blood of Jesus. His experience in Athens (Acts 17) showed that he was somewhat frustrated with arguing with the intellectuals.

My personal experience, and the experience of some people that I know, has been that as we read about the blood covenant, the knowledge bypasses our intellect and goes directly into our hearts. Another way to put it is that the blood covenant revelation is for the right side of our brain and not so much for the left side. The left side of the brain deals more with logic and intellect. The right side of the brain is more about the “heart language, or the creative side.”

Adam and Eve chose to eat from the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil, which I submit was their intellect. The Tree of Life is the Word of God.

I know so many Christians who “know” so much in their heads, but their hearts are lacking the authentic and true relationship with Jesus.

As you read these chapters about The Blood of The Everlasting Covenant, simply allow the stories to soak into your soul. I submit that you will soon obtain a more accurate self-identity in Jesus. You will see yourself as God sees you, a new creation in Him, totally recreated and reborn to a new race, which has dominion over your spiritual enemies. You will see bondages, habits, addictions, depression, oppression, hopelessness and fear, all be displaced by the love of God.

## Acknowledgements

I want to thank my precious wife Carol for her help and encouragement in doing this book.

Carol encouraged me to actually create this book. Originally, these chapters were lessons that we taught in our Bible class at Mount Paran North Church of God. Carol continued to influence me to assemble them into a book.

Thanks to our friends who performed some very detailed proof reading.

Thanks to Mount Paran North Church of God who made it possible for us to bring these lessons to the wonderful group of people in our class.

Thanks to all the people in our Overcomers Bible Class who continually encouraged us to bring these lessons to print, and who are demonstrating in their lives the fruit from studying them.

2006

*Reproduction, resale or internet posting prohibited*

## Table of Contents

INTRODUCTION .....	1
CHAPTER 1 – RELIGION OR BLOOD? .....	6
CHAPTER 2 – ADAM’S WORDS OF DEATH .....	15
CHAPTER 3 – GRACE BY INHERITANCE .....	29
CHAPTER 4 – MORE ABOUT BLOOD COVENANTS.....	42
CHAPTER 5 – BLOOD COVENANT NOT COMMON .....	55
CHAPTER 6 – CAIN AND ABEL .....	67
CHAPTER 7 – NOAH FOUND GRACE .....	81
CHAPTER 8 – ABRAM RECEIVED GRACE .....	99
CHAPTER 9 – GRACE AND THE BLOOD COVENANT? .....	117
CHAPTER 10 – THE BLOODY TRENCH .....	131
CHAPTER 11 – ABRAM’S RESPONSE TO THE COVENANT .....	143
CHAPTER 12 – THE BLOOD COVENANT BREAKS CURSES .....	154
CHAPTER 13 – HAVE YOU BEEN A SLAVE? .....	165
CHAPTER 14 – THE DEPTH OF THE RELATIONSHIP .....	180
CHAPTER 15 – STORMS IN YOUR LIFE? PASSOVER BLOOD.....	197
CHAPTER 16 – WHO IS YOUR UNCIRCUMCISED PHILISTINE? .....	209

<b>CHAPTER 17 – FROM LO DEBAR TO JERUSALEM .....</b>	<b>224</b>
<b>CHAPTER 18 – PURPOSE FOR YOUR LIFE.....</b>	<b>242</b>
<b>CHAPTER 19 – THE HOLY SPIRIT .....</b>	<b>254</b>
<b>CHAPTER 20 – THE BLOOD FOR HEALING.....</b>	<b>267</b>
<b>CHAPTER 21 – THE LION OF THE TRIBE OF JUDAH .....</b>	<b>280</b>
<b>CHAPTER 22 – ISAIAH CHAPTER 53 .....</b>	<b>292</b>
<b>APPENDIX A – RELATIONSHIP SKILLS .....</b>	<b>295</b>

*Reproduction, resale or internet posting prohibited*

## Introduction

Do you find yourself in the “fires of life?” Is life overwhelming for you? The God who created the entire universe is offering to exchange places with you through a blood covenant.

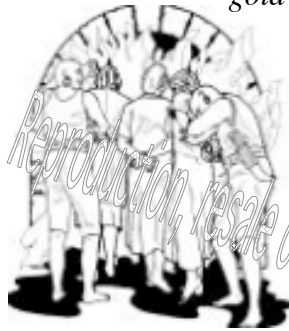
Daniel chapter 3 contains a story about King Nebuchadnezzar. The King made an image of himself and ordered that all people should worship him through the image. The decree went out that whoever would not worship this statue would be cast into a fiery furnace. The three Hebrews – Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-Nego – refused to worship the king through his image-statue.

**Daniel 3:16-18 says,**

16 *“Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-Nego answered and said to the king, ‘O Nebuchadnezzar, we have no need to answer you in this matter.*

17 *If that is the case, our God whom we serve is able to deliver us from the burning fiery furnace, and He will deliver us from your hand, O king.*

18 *But if not, let it be known to you, O king, that we do not serve your gods, nor will we worship the gold image which you have set up.’”*



The Hebrews used fire for their worship. However, their fire memorialized the blood covenant sacrifice. Their fire killed the innocent lamb thus saving their own lives.

What happened was no less than a miracle.

**Daniel 3:19-25 says,**

19 *“Then Nebuchadnezzar was full of fury, and the expression on his face changed toward Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-Nego. He spoke and commanded that they heat the furnace seven times more than it was usually heated.*

20 And he commanded certain mighty men of valor who were in his army to bind Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-Nego, and cast them into the burning fiery furnace.

21 Then these men were bound in their coats, their trousers, their turbans, and their other garments, and were cast into the midst of the burning fiery furnace.

22 Therefore, because the king's command was urgent, and the furnace exceedingly hot, the flame of the fire killed those men who took up Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-Nego.

23 And these three men, Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-Nego, fell down bound into the midst of the burning fiery furnace.



24 Then King Nebuchadnezzar was astonished; and he rose in haste and spoke, saying to his counselors, 'Did we not cast three men bound into the midst of the fire?' They answered and said to the king, 'True, O king.'

25 'Look!' he answered, 'I see four men loose, walking in the midst of the fire; and they are not hurt, and the form of the fourth is like the Son of God.'

**The furnace contained four men, but only three came out. Daniel 3:26-27 says,**

26 "Then Nebuchadnezzar went near the mouth of the burning fiery furnace and spoke, saying, 'Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-Nego, servants of the Most High God, come out, and come here. Then Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-Nego came from the midst of the fire.

27 And the satraps, administrators, governors, and the king's counselors gathered together, and they saw these men on whose bodies the fire had no

*power; the hair of their head was not singed nor were their garments affected, and the smell of fire was not on them.”*

The fourth Man in the fire was God Himself, the Son of God, and He stayed in the furnace and took the death penalty for the other three. But as we know, He was resurrected after three days! He will do the same for you! Whatever it is that has put your life into bondage, into a prison, or in torment or hopelessness, God will allow that to come upon Himself on your behalf so that you can be free. He will give you His resurrected life!

**These three Hebrews were made righteous by faith.**

It says in Romans 3:23 that all have sinned, including these three Hebrew boys.

**Romans 6:22-23 says,**

*22 “But now having been set free from sin, and having become slaves of God, you have your fruit to holiness, and the end, everlasting life.*

*23 For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.”*

These boys were, as Daniel chapter 3 says, “clothed in other garments.”

**Isaiah 61:10 says,**

*10 “I will greatly rejoice in the LORD, My soul shall be joyful in my God; For He has clothed me with the garments of salvation, He has covered me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decks himself with ornaments, and as a bride adorns herself with her jewels.”*

The reason they did not burn was that Jesus took on their sinful nature and burned in their stead. They took on Jesus' righteousness and as a result, could not be injured.

The result had eternal value, much more than just the deliverance of these three men. King Nebuchadnezzar sent out



decrees worldwide that the Hebrew God should be worshipped. God's fame was made known by this king throughout all of the inhabited earth, at least as far as his kingdom reached.

**Daniel 3:28-30 says,**

*28 "Nebuchadnezzar spoke, saying, 'Blessed be the God of Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-Nego, who sent His Angel and delivered His servants who trusted in Him, and they have frustrated the king's word, and yielded their bodies, that they should not serve nor worship any god except their own God!*

*29 Therefore I make a decree that any people, nation, or language which speaks anything amiss against the God of Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-Nego shall be cut in pieces, and their houses shall be made an ash heap; because there is no other God who can deliver like this.'*

*30 Then the king promoted Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-Nego in the province of Babylon."*

**That is the concept of a blood covenant.**

Two parties exchange places. If you need to exchange places with Someone, if you need a new start in life, a new birth as it may be, read on.

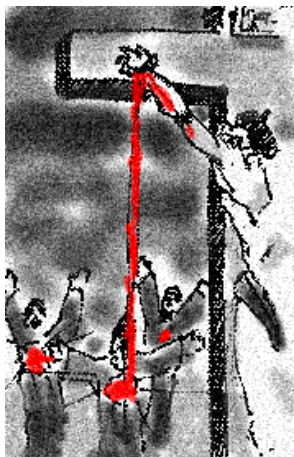
As you discover the love of God in the Blood of the Everlasting Covenant, you may be brought to a place where you begin to worship Him as these Hebrews did. You will discover then, as Jerry Seville once said, "If you don't bow, you won't burn." Your life will not even "smell like smoke," and your influence will make God known to others.

You will also, progressively, begin to understand better who you really are in Christ. The blood covenant image will bypass your mind and go directly into your heart. This will give you an accurate image of who you really are. It will dispel the lie that attaches itself to you, telling you that you are unworthy. As you see your new self-image, you will simply find yourself living a different life, no longer desiring to do those things that are unpleasing to God. The next result will be that the power of God in you will do warfare against the satanic powers in your realm

of influence. Not only will you be delivered, but more importantly, God's plan to reach others will be manifested through your life.

*Reproduction, resale or internet posting prohibited*

## Chapter 1 Religion or Blood?



*“Then Jesus said to them, ‘Most assuredly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, you have no life in you. Whoever eats My flesh and drinks My blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day. For My flesh is food indeed, and My blood is drink indeed. He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him’” (John 6:53-56).*

### **Have you ever been denied a miracle?**

As a believer perhaps there have been desperate times in your life when you felt it would be appropriate for God to give you a miracle. You read about His miracle working power in the Bible, you read that He loves you, now you want to see it in your circumstances. Putting these two assumptions together, you ask God for a miracle, and you expect Him to give it to you. Sometimes He does, but sometimes, perhaps even more often, He does not.

### ***What are you to believe? Where is God in your affliction?***

Perhaps we can learn from the events recorded in John chapter 6. Jesus had just supernaturally fed more than 5,000 poor and needy people in the setting of a third world country. He took five loaves of bread and two fish and did a miracle of increase that would astonish anybody. They thought for sure that this was the prophet that Moses had spoken of, the one who would again provide manna from Heaven.

### **John 6:15 says,**

*15 “Therefore when Jesus perceived that they were about to come and take Him by force to make Him king, He departed again to the mountain by Himself alone.”*

The disciples entered their boat and crossed the sea. Jesus walked on the water, and they arrived to the other side together. But the crowd who had been fed looked for Jesus the next morning hoping for another miracle. They finally found Him.

***Jesus refused their request.***

**John 6:26-27 says,**

26 *“Jesus answered them and said, ‘Most assuredly, I say to you, you seek Me, not because you saw the signs, but because you ate of the loaves and were filled.’*

27 *Do not labor for the food which perishes, but for the food which endures to everlasting life, which the Son of Man will give you, because God the Father has set His seal on Him.’”*

Jesus admonished them to turn their efforts to what God requires. He knew that feeding them again would simply be another short-term fix, but it would not solve their true problem, which resided in their hearts and souls. Jesus wants us to prosper. Jesus wants to meet our needs, but from the inside out, not from the outside in!

**John 6:29 says,**

29 *“Jesus answered and said to them, ‘This is the work of God, that you believe in Him whom He sent.’”*

Then Jesus started a conversation that really caught them off guard. He has a way of doing that. We may be thinking about a material or earthly need, and He turns our attention to the real issue.

**John 6:31-35 says,**

31 *“Our fathers ate the manna in the desert; as it is written, ‘He gave them bread from heaven to eat.’*

32 *Then Jesus said to them, ‘Most assuredly, I say to you, Moses did not give you the bread from heaven, but My Father gives you the true bread from heaven.*

33 *For the bread of God is He who comes down from heaven and gives life to the world.’*

*34 Then they said to Him, ‘Lord, give us this bread always.’*

*35 And Jesus said to them, ‘I am the bread of life. He who comes to Me shall never hunger, and he who believes in Me shall never thirst.’”*

***Their response was interesting.***

**John 6:41 says,**

*41 “The Jews then complained about Him, because He said, ‘I am the bread which came down from heaven.’”*

Then He took them even deeper down His road of surprises when He said, “I am the living bread which came down from heaven. If anyone eats of this bread, he will live forever; and the bread that I shall give is My flesh, which I shall give for the life of the world” (John 6:51), and “He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him” (John 6:56).

Jesus was offering them a blood covenant with the Maker of the Universe. Jesus was using mystical blood covenant language in this conversation.

This is what He offers you and me. Can you just imagine? The infinite Almighty God, sinless and holy offers to exchange places with you and me, mere created and sinful people! He knew that having a blood covenant would make these people one with Him. They would abide in Him and He would abide in them. He knew that if they accepted the covenant that all their needs would be cared for. Which would you rather have, a miracle to take care of today's problem, or a covenant of blood with Deity?

**John 6:60 says,**

*60 “Therefore many of His disciples when they heard this, said, ‘This is a hard saying who can understand it?’”*

Jesus persisted and even made things sound more difficult. He asked them how much more they would be offended if He left and they could not even catch Him to eat His flesh and drink

His blood. He was speaking of His crucifixion and resurrection (John 6:61-62). It is human nature to desire a god or an idol that the natural eye can see.

**Here is the major point.**

**John 6:63 says,**

*63 “It is the Spirit who gives life; the flesh profits nothing. The words that I speak to you are spirit, and they are life.”*

In other words He was saying, “You don’t have to actually become a cannibal and drink My blood, but if you want a blood covenant with Me you will eat My Word, because My Word and I are one. My Words are supernatural. The more of the Word you obtain, the more of My blood you receive!” Covenants are made with words. In this case the Word replaces blood. Yes, Jesus shed His blood, and that blood is transferred to you through His Word. You have an invitation to enter into the blood covenant with the Maker, God Himself. All He has is yours, provided, of course, that all you have is His!

**“Sorry, Jesus, without a miracle I am out of here!”**

**John 6:66 says,**

*66 “From that time many of His disciples went back and walked with Him no more.”*

**Some disciples stayed.**

**John 6:67-69 says,**

*67 “Then Jesus said to the twelve, ‘Do you also want to go away?’*

*68 But Simon Peter answered Him, ‘Lord, to whom shall we go? You have the words of eternal life.*

*69 Also we have come to believe and knew that You are the Christ, the Son of the living God.’”*

Jesus, through the blood covenant and exchange that took place, gave us His resurrection power so that we could apply it here on earth on His behalf, in His name!

Quick fixes and miracles will not build your character; they will make you dependent slaves.

**Psalm 119:67 says,**

*67 “Before I was afflicted I went astray, but now I keep Your word.”*

God created us to be fed from the inside, not from the outside. Remember He said in Matthew 6:28 that lilies are clothed better than Solomon because they have life inside of them. Our provisions and all of our needs, emotional, spiritual and physical are to come from the life of God on the inside of us.

**Blood covenants are embedded in the nature of mankind.**

Historically almost every culture in the world has recognized the ritual of the blood covenant. It is only in recent civilized history that mankind has become so “educated” that they have reasoned their way out of the significance of the blood covenant.

Contracts have replaced covenants in much of today’s civilized world. A contract is a document that states an agreement between the parties and then lays out what happens when the contract is broken. It is altogether “selfish.” It assumes that the parties will break the agreement.

A covenant is the basis of relationship, an expression of love between the parties. It carries the spirit of generosity, sacrifice, and death to a self-centered life. It carries the spirit of resurrection to an abundant life, love and intimacy. It is a lifelong commitment to each party wherein each party gives up its right to its own possessions, strengths and resources. *In a covenant relationship each party dies to his/her own personal interests, and puts the interest of the other party in first place!*

Covenants are usually made between unequal parties. In a primitive culture one party may have great expertise in agriculture and sees itself as totally defenseless militarily. The other party may have great military strength, but is having a difficult time feeding its people. The covenant they make in blood contains those mutual promises to care for the other’s weakness. The penalty for failing to do so is death!

The American Indian attacked the white man even when the Indians knew it would be to their death. Why? Because the white man made covenant with them and broke it. The Indian had a spiritual obligation to seek death. That meant more to them than their own destruction.

We must allow God to renew our minds to covenant thinking in order to really understand and appreciate Him the most. If we do not understand covenant thinking we will not appreciate the Bible, its power, its authority and God's love. We will not understand the depth of God's love because we will continually judge His love from our own perspective.

**Covenant love is like none other.**

In Hebrew language it is expressed as *cheched*, which is commonly translated as mercy or *lovingkindness* as in Psalm 23.

**Psalm 23:6 (KJV) says,**

*6 "Surely goodness and mercy (cheched) shall follow me all the days of my life: and I will dwell in the house of the LORD for ever."*

In the New Testament Greek the word is *agape*. It indicates an aching love just looking for someone to pour on.

It is expressed in the following Scripture.

**Ephesians 2:4-7 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*4 "But God – so rich is He in His mercy! Because of and in order to satisfy the great and wonderful and intense love with which He loved us,*

*5 Even when we were dead (slain) by [our own] shortcomings and trespasses, He made us alive together in fellowship and in union with Christ; [He gave us the very life of Christ Himself, the same new life with which He quickened Him, for it is by grace (His favor and mercy which you did not deserve) that you are saved (delivered from judgment and made partakers of Christ's salvation)].*

*6 And He raised us up together with Him and made us sit down together [giving us joint seating with Him] in the heavenly sphere [by virtue of our*



*being] in Christ Jesus (the Messiah, the Anointed One).*

*7 He did this that He might clearly demonstrate through the ages to come the immeasurable (limitless, surpassing) riches of His free grace (His unmerited favor) in [His] kindness and goodness of heart toward us in Christ Jesus.”*

**A blood covenant defined.**

<sup>1</sup> *“A rite by which two persons absorb each the other's blood, either by drinking or by transfusion to the veins, whereby they become bound to each other in even a closer connection than that of brotherhood. It prevails in many countries, civilized and uncivilized, and may be traced back to extreme antiquity. It existed in the rites and literature of the ancient Egyptians, and is frequently alluded to in the Bible. Dr. H. Clay Trumbull, who has made a scientific examination of the subject, holds that its origin is in the universally dominative primitive convictions that the blood is the life; that the heart, as the blood-fountain, is the very soul of every personality; that blood-transfer is soul-transfer; that blood-sharing, human or divine-human, secures an interunion of natures; and that a union of the human nature with the divine is the highest ultimate attainment reached out after by the most primitive as well as by the most enlightened mind of humanity. With savage and barbarous peoples the rite lies at the foundations of cannibalism; it is the motive of sacrifices, in which the animal is offered to the god as a substitute for the human blood. In one form the drops of blood were put in wine or other draughts and drunken; then the wine was drunken without the actual presence of the blood, whence we have the use*

---

<sup>1</sup> Walsh, William S., *Curiosities of Popular Customs* - Copyright 1897 by J.B. Lippincott Company Copyright 1925 by Katharine Walsh - Main >> Cultures & Beliefs >> Christianity <http://hometown.aol.com/>

*of wine in pledges of friendship and in marriage. Among the Jews it is symbolized in circumcision; among Christians, in the use of wine in the sacrament.”*

**What would you choose?**

Which would you rather experience, a miracle that will fix your problems, or the miracle of a blood covenant with the Creator of the universe? Don't be like those disciples who walked away from Jesus as recorded in John chapter 6. Many Christians do so. They don't really walk away in their minds, but they do not cherish the Word of God as the essence of the relationship.

**Isaiah 53:3 says,**

*3 “He is despised and rejected by men, A Man of sorrows and acquainted with grief. And we hid, as it were, our faces from Him; He was despised, and we did not esteem Him.”*

Who is the *Him* in this Scripture? Jesus. Who is Jesus? The Word of God! *Despise* means to consider worthless. Why do so many Christians despise the Word of God and consider it of little value?

We avoid the curses in our lives and invoke the blessings when we hear and obey the Word.

**Deuteronomy 28:2 (KJV) says,**

*2 “And all these blessings shall come on thee, and overtake thee, if thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the LORD thy God”*

*Hearken* means to listen to, to understand, to yield to and obey.

**Deuteronomy 28:15 (KJV) says,**

*15 “But it shall come to pass, if thou wilt not hearken unto the voice of the LORD thy God, to observe to do all his commandments and his statutes which I command thee this day; that all these curses shall come upon thee, and overtake thee.”*

When you need a miracle and you don't see one manifesting, pursue the blood covenant by being diligent to hear the Word of God. Do whatever it takes to stay in the Word until that logos, the general Word of God, becomes rhema, the personal Word of God coming directly from the lips of Jesus to your heart. You will become addicted to that relationship.

I pray that you will be impacted in a way even deeper than having your needs met. I pray that when you realize that you indeed have a blood covenant with the Creator, the One who has existed forever, that you would experience a sense of awe and reverence of what you now contain. You have become the container of Deity. This should be enough to make anybody get their minds off of themselves and their temporal needs, and onto Jesus, God Almighty!

**It is not just about you!**

I heard a story about a psychiatrist who was counseling with a lady. She was in her fifth session. The psychiatrist said, “I am going to write you a prescription that will totally heal your problem.” She said, “Okay, fantastic. Let me see it.” The doctor handed the lady what he had written. She said, “This is absurd. This is shameful. What do you mean taking my hard earned money and giving me something like this? This says to check into a nice hotel at Niagara Falls. Then I should go stand at the base of the Falls for four days and just watch it. How will this help me?” The doctor said, “For five weeks you have told me about yourself, your dreams, your problems, how others have made you feel, how others have hurt you, and so on. You just need to see that there is something bigger than you and get your mind off of yourself.”

Now go ahead and give Jesus your words, and absorb His blood covenant Word. Stand in awe of what you receive, and you will never be the same!

## Chapter 2

### Adam's Words of Death

If we don't learn from history, we are fools. Often, it is necessary to go back into history in order to really see where we find ourselves today. Too many people only go back into their own history, the lives that they have lived and known, and thus become prisoners of vanity.

In the previous chapter I wrote about how words, God's and ours, are containers. The Word of God contains the blood of God according to John chapter 6, and our words of sin spoken to God carry our old sin nature into Jesus. We saw how God's word can now bring us back into a union and oneness with God the Creator.

This chapter is designed to give us an idea of God's original design for mankind. From there we can have a better view of where He wants to take us, and a better idea of His work of restoration. I also hope that this chapter will give you, the reader, the strong desire to cooperate with God by speaking the words that God ordains for you personally. Doing so will certainly be a major contribution for bringing God's abundant plans to you for your life and for His service through you.

Warning! Do not be deceived. Speaking the proper words, speaking the promises of God, will be of no avail if you are like those disciples in John chapter 6 who left Jesus. One must not only be a hearer of His Word, but a doer as well. Obedience to His Word is the number one priority.

#### **Learn from Adam's story.**

Adam had the blood connection with God but he lost it. His words became perverted. Now God has a plan of restoration that is based upon God breathed words spoken by him to man and by man to this world for restoration. When I use the name *Adam*, I am not limiting that to the original man Adam, but to Adam, the Adamic race including you and me before God gave us the new birth.

**Genesis 2:7 (KJV) says,**

*7 “And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.”*

The Lord worked like a potter, a very intelligent and scientific one, to form Adam from the earth’s substance. Then somehow the Lord breathed His very own life into Adam. The result was that Adam received God’s spirit and the by-product was Adam’s soul. Adam must have had God’s perfect blood in him, although Adam was not deity as Jesus was when He became flesh.

*Adam was originally given dominion to rule the earth by his words.*

**Genesis 1:26-28 says,**

*26 “Then God said, ‘Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth.’*

*27 So God created man in His own image; in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them.*

*28 Then God blessed them, and God said to them, ‘Be fruitful and multiply; fill the earth and subdue it; have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over every living thing that moves on the earth.’*

Adam, however, was instructed to not work by himself, but to be co-laborers with God. God instructed Adam to live by the Word of God, the Tree of Life. He warned Adam to not depend upon his own intellect, his own will and emotions, but to only rely on what He, God, said.

God’s plan was to fellowship with Adam, speak His Words to him, and have Adam carry out the plans and ideas. Adam was to respond by working and obeying the Word, but also by speaking it as well. Adam and Eve were designed to have a very

close intimate friendship with God Himself. For some time they did. Most religious people cannot imagine this. The fruit of this continual intimacy was to be Adam speaking God’s Words over the earth. Earth was designed to be ruled by the words of man. Everything in and on the earth responds to man’s words.

God warned Adam that he would die if he disobeyed. He did disobey and died spiritually immediately, and over 900 years later he died physically. It took his body that long to “learn how to die.” It was God’s grace that Adam did not live forever in his fallen condition. The earth began to respond as well; the natural order of things began to corrupt. Storms began to wreck havoc on nature, animals which were previously friendly, became evil and dangerous.

**The earth is ruled by words spoken by a human being.**

**Psalm 8:2 says,**

*2 “Out of the mouth of babes and nursing infants  
You have ordained strength, because of Your enemies,  
that You may silence the enemy and the avenger.”*

**Psalm 8:6 says,**

*6 “You have made him to have dominion over the  
works of Your hands; You have put all things under  
his feet.”*

The two “trees” that represented Adam’s instructions were the Tree of Life, which is the Word of God, and the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil, which is human reasoning without God being involved. As long as Adam stayed in fellowship with the Lord God, heard His Words, obeyed them and spoke them as words of dominion over the earth and every creeping thing, then all would be well. The life connection between God and Adam would have been maintained. However, Adam began to speak his own words that were formed while out of fellowship with God, and then his descendants began to speak Satan’s words. Since then, the world has been under the power of the prince of darkness.

***Eve’s words were wrong.***

Eve said that God said, “but of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God has said, ‘You shall not eat it, nor shall you touch it, lest you die’” (Genesis 3:3). God never said not to touch it, instead He said, “but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not *eat*, for in the day that you *eat* of it you shall surely die” (Genesis 2:17). Was Satan really to blame?

**Adam began to speak words of his own and of Satan’s origin and the earth responded.**

In the previous chapter we saw how Jesus gave us the key to re-establishing the blood covenant with God through His Word. This is what Adam lost, and that was through the fruit of Adam’s words coming through the abundance of his heart.

Adam and Eve immediately became “religious” when they knew that they were out of fellowship with God. What do I mean by religious? First, they began to blame others, and failed to take responsibility. They began to speak the words that originated from their own minds, rather than the Word of God. Then they tried to make amends by using fig leaves.

**Genesis 3:7 says**

*7 “Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves coverings.”*

All of Scripture, especially the words of Jesus, warns us, that our negative words are powerful for evil. Not only do they create evil in our own lives, but also in the lives of those around us. We will be accountable for our words at the judgment. Why? Because our words can create and also they can destroy!

**Careless with words!**

Being careless with our words will even keep God’s presence from being real in our lives. Psalm 15:1 asks the questions, “Who will abide in Your tabernacle? Who may dwell in Your holy hill?” Then the next few verses lay out the requirements. They include walking uprightly, working righteousness, speaking the truth in one’s heart, not backbiting with the tongue, not doing

evil to one’s neighbor, and not taking up a reproach against his friend. Backbiting can be likened to gossip and taking up a reproach can be likened to listening to and receiving gossip.

**Colossians 4:6** says,

6 “Let *your speech always be with grace, seasoned with salt, that you may know how you ought to answer each one.*”

***Death and life.***

Satan’s name in the New Testament actually means *slanderer*. James says in chapter 3 of his epistle, that the tongue sets the whole course of nature on fire, like the fire of hell. He says that, in effect, the tongue rules the entire brain center, and therefore the entire person. Science has discovered that indeed the speech center has dominion over the entire brain.

**Proverbs 18:21** says,

21 “*Death and life are in the power of the tongue, and those that love it will eat its fruit.*”

**Mark 11:22-24** says,

22 “*So Jesus answered and said to them, ‘Have faith in God [literally means, “have the faith of God”].*

23 *For assuredly, I say to you, whoever says to this mountain, ‘Be removed and be cast into the sea,’ and does not doubt in his heart, but believes that those things he says will be done, he will have whatever he says.*

24 *Therefore I say to you, whatever things you ask when you pray, believe that you receive them, and you will have them.”*

The discipline of the tongue is important. It is important to remember that most of the time your tongue will only speak what is in your heart. Keep a guard on your heart and your tongue. Misusing the tongue is something that began with Adam. However, we are called to turn that around by hearing what God says, and then speaking it to dominate the earth as God originally



intended. Remember, Jesus made you a king. Kings rule by their commands expressed by their words.

**Matthew 12:36** says,

*36 “But I say to you that for every idle word men may speak, they will give account of it in the day of judgment.”*

**Complaining can block your fruit bearing and keep you from the “Promise Land.”**

To complain about anything is very dangerous, with one exception. That exception is when we need to pour out our hearts to God and let Him know about all of our sin. Make sure, however, that you frame your conversation with God about your complaints as a confession of sin, something that you are confessing that you do not like. To actually issue a complaint to God is what I am calling dangerous. It is also dangerous to complain to others. I know it may be a difficult habit to stop and I understand that not everybody is at the point of accepting everything in their lives as something that God wants them to work through. My advice is to work to stop complaining by learning to trust God at a deeper level.

**Jesus.**

If Jesus would have complained about bearing your sin, or being misjudged by the authorities that judged Him guilty and sentenced Him to be crucified, I submit that you and I would not be saved today. Why? Because complaining stops fruit bearing. Rather, look at Jesus’ attitude.

**Hebrews 12:2 b (Amplified Bible)** says,

*2 “...He, for the joy [of obtaining the prize] that was set before Him, endured the cross, despising and ignoring the shame, and is now seated at the right hand of the throne of God.”*

**Abraham.**

It is amazing that after all that Abraham (Abram) had been through that he did not complain when God told him to sacrifice Isaac.

**Genesis 22:1-3** says,

1 “Now it came to pass after these things that God tested Abraham, and said to him, “Abraham!” And he said, “Here I am.”

2 Then He said, “Take now your son, your only son Isaac, whom you love, and go to the land of Moriah, and offer him there as a burnt offering on one of the mountains of which I shall tell you.”

3 So Abraham rose early in the morning and saddled his donkey, and took two of his young men with him, and Isaac his son; and he split the wood for the burnt offering, and arose and went to the place of which God had told him.”

### **Old Testament Joseph**

Old Testament Joseph never complained even through the pit, through Potiphar’s house, through the prison and through all the betrayals, the testimony was always, “The Lord was with him.” The result was that Joseph’s overcoming bore much fruit for the Kingdom of God. He fed the nations and saved Israel.

### **Israel in the Wilderness.**

**Numbers 14:27 says,**

27 “How long shall I bear with this evil congregation who complain against Me? I have heard the complaints which the children of Israel make against Me.”

God had promised the Promise Land (the land of fruit bearing) to those Israelites who He had supernaturally led out of Egypt. However, they did not enter into the promise due to their complaining.

### **Moses in the Wilderness.**

Even Moses did not enter into the Promise Land, the land of fruit bearing, because of his complaining. He did not “hallow” God. In other words, Moses did not properly represent God to the people. God wanted to give them mercy, but Moses, as a representative of God, called them “rebels,” and made them think wrongfully of God.

**Numbers 20:10-12 says,**

10 “And Moses and Aaron gathered the assembly together before the rock; and he said to them, ‘Hear now, you rebels! Must we bring water for you out of this rock?’

11 Then Moses lifted his hand and struck the rock twice with his rod; and water came out abundantly, and the congregation and their animals drank.

12 Then the LORD spoke to Moses and Aaron, ‘Because you did not believe Me, to hallow Me in the eyes of the children of Israel, therefore you shall not bring this assembly into the land which I have given them.’”

**Philippians 2:14-15 says,**

14 “Do all things without complaining and disputing,

15 that you may become blameless and harmless, children of God without fault in the midst of a crooked and perverse generation, among whom you shine as lights in the world.”

Be sensitive and ask God to show you anything in your life that might block you from bearing fruit for His glory, especially complaining. Just this week before modifying this chapter, God convicted me of such a sin, and in repenting and receiving forgiveness I can move on as a fruit bearer to His glory, shining His light to a lost world.

I love the verse in the old Gospel hymn that says, “And the toils of the road will seem nothing when I get to the end of the way.”

**God’s original blood relationship still creates a craving, a longing inside of us for the blood covenant with God.**

In spite of the fact that Adam became disconnected with God, he and his descendents maintained a deep craving for that original connection. I believe that craving has been passed down through the generations in much the same way that Adam’s sin has been passed down.

I believe that in each of us exists a craving for that blood connection that Adam once had. I believe that the more primitive and even Eastern cultures, which rely more upon their intuition than their intellect, sense that craving for the blood covenant in a greater way. God’s purpose is to continually change us into “children,” so that we may sense that craving.

One of the ways to develop and enhance this craving is to practice a valuable exercise of ‘taking up your cross’ on a daily basis, that means, to exchange God’s will for your will, God’s thoughts for your thoughts, and God’s emotions for your emotions. One way to help you with this is given in our publication The Flowing River, which may be found at our web site, <http://www.isob-bible.org/flowingriver.htm>.

***The power of your decision.***

The power created in your life by making a decision is extraordinary! Something very powerful happens in the spiritual realm each time you make a final decision about a matter. If you will make a daily decision, as mentioned in Romans 12:1-2, to offer yourself as a living sacrifice, you will see God's Word open to you in a brand new way. If you will make a daily decision to govern your words by Scripture and not by your feelings, you will see blessings come that you never expected. You will have a new sense of God’s presence and His nearness. Scripture references include John 14:21-23, which says that God makes Himself real to those who obey His words.

**The following is a quote from The Blood Covenant <sup>2</sup> by Dr. Malcolm Smith.**

*In it, he shows how man’s natural cravings have changed since the Fall of Adam. However, I maintain that if we continually decide for God’s will, His thoughts and His emotions that we will see ourselves changed from the fallen image described below, to God’s image, the very character of Jesus Himself.*

---

<sup>2</sup> Much of this information, that part within the markers and in italics, is adapted in part, not in whole, from *The Blood Covenant* by Dr. Malcolm Smith – Malcolm Smith Ministries, Box 298747, San Antonio, TX 78229

*Man, the peak of God’s creation, made in the image of God, had now become something indwelt by Satan and energized by demons and the flesh! Man was made to be “married” to God, a finite person who can relate to the infinite Person, and to other created persons. When man is in living covenant unity with God, he is fully human, when he is not he is an abnormal being! Man is the only creation who has the choice, to trust the character and Word of his creator. Adam chose the lie; he chose to believe the created Satan rather than the One who created all things!*

*Now man was aware of his nakedness, he was separated from other human beings; he was seeking meaning in himself rather than in God. He is no longer fulfilling the meaning of his existence. He was joined to Satan. Man now seeks his meaning in himself and in the created. He seeks meaning in marriage, children, money, position, work, career, education, social concerns, religions, mind-altering drugs, etc. He makes idols of things and people.*

*Man now walks beside himself, self-conscious, he views himself in comparison to others, either superior or inferior. He sees himself as god. He asserts himself against his fellow humans, seeking his own highest at the expense of others. He craves acceptance and adoration at any cost and lives in envy. He is full of self-pity and craves the pity of others. He lives in the fear of death and is the only creature that knows that he will die. He is gripped by the fear of non-being and lives to survive this flesh in order to “beat death.” He builds shelters, hunts for food, searches for water, mates and births to continue his life in offspring and congregates for protection. He fears starvation, thirst, exposure to heat and cold, germs, old age, accidents, tornadoes, earthquakes, floods, travel and neighbors who may kill him. He exists in anxiety concerning just staying alive. He*

*works feverishly to stave off the inevitable; he is caught up in meaningless activity. He seeks to perpetuate himself with monuments, memoirs, and plaques – anything that will allow him to live- even when he is dead. He knows intuitively that he was not meant to die, but is revolted by it and fights it. He lives in a state of futility.*

*Man’s life is in a state of sinfulness, missing the purpose and falling short of the glory for which he was made. He cannot do anything right if he is separated from the reason he is here.*

**The craving for a blood connection with God is strong because of God’s original idea for man.**

When God wanted vegetation He spoke to the earth wherein vegetation must live. When He wanted fish He spoke to the waters, the environment in which the fish must have their life. When God wanted animals He spoke to the earth on which and from which animals must sustain their life. However, when God created man, He spoke to Himself, the very One in which man must continue to live in order to have life.

***God spoke to Himself.***

**Genesis 1:26 says,**

26 “Then God said, ‘Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth.’”

Adam and Eve, and every culture since them, has endeavored to “fix” this problem with religion of some kind.

God knew that He needed more than just to cover this fallen condition of man whom He created; He needed to perform surgery and reconnect God and man. Man had now been separated from his life source, the Word of God and the life of God dwelling within. Fig leaves could not fix this. Religion can never solve our problem of being disconnected from God; only a

blood covenant can do that. Religion is a fig leaf cover up, but it does not unite us back into the blood veins of our Creator!

**The solution.**

Adam had God’s blood, but after his sin his blood became tainted, he was disconnected from the very life of God; he needed a covenant of blood and God was ready. The solution? It is a covenant of blood, the reconnecting of man to deity. The blood covenant that exchanges one life for another and causes an inter-union of spirit and soul to God is the only solution.

The Lord God spoke out His plan for the blood covenant that would restore the connection, right there in the Garden, right after the Fall of man. His Word then was powerful enough to make this an experience in your life today!

**Genesis 3:14-15 says,**

*14 “So the LORD God said to the serpent: ‘Because you have done this, you are cursed more than all cattle, and more than every beast of the field; on your belly you shall go, and you shall eat dust all the days of your life.*

*15 And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your seed and her Seed; He shall bruise your head, and you shall bruise His heel.’”*

**Genesis 3:21 says,**

*21 “Also for Adam and his wife the LORD God made tunics of skin, and clothed them.”*

The Lord killed an animal, a perfect animal, shed its blood and covered the couple with its bloody skin as a covering and a blood covenant emblem to keep them eternally safe until Jesus could come and shed His blood on the earth.

**Jesus is called the “last Adam” in 1 Corinthians 15:45.**

In the previous chapter we showed how the last Adam, Jesus, gave us the key to receiving the blood covenant. He said that if we wanted His blood, we would have to obtain it through His

Word. The interesting contrast is that the first Adam broke the covenant with his words. Adam relied upon his own mind to form his words without input from God. He abandoned the Tree of Life, which is the Word of God.

Jesus, like the first Adam, had the blood of God. However, when He was tempted to give up God’s blood through sin, He prevailed against Satan. Therefore He was qualified to be that perfect Lamb for us. After he was killed and then resurrected, He gave us His Spirit, the one that contains God’s blood. However this time, it is a resurrected Spirit over which Satan no longer has dominion.

**Speaking God’s Word will bring His Kingdom back to earth.**

Now we mere humans have the privilege of partnership to bring God’s Kingdom to this earth. As we fellowship with Jesus through the Holy Spirit and with the Father, He speaks His Word, His will into our hearts. That Word is a rhema, or a customized Word for us individually, which is meant to bring fruit that will supply our needs, change our character and glorify God through us for the building of His Kingdom.

My personal experience with this process since 1979 is interesting. While I do not have room here for all of my testimonies, I can say that God has always done according to the following Scripture.

**Ephesians 3:20 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*20 “Now to Him Who, by (in consequence of) the [action of His] power that is at work within us, is able to [carry out His purpose and] do superabundantly, far over and above all that we [dare] ask or think [infinitely beyond our highest prayers, desires, thoughts, hopes, or dreams]”*

Our ideas, dreams and visions for our lives are invariably too small for God, or at best they miss the mark. However, this I know, not only through the Word but also by personal experience. That is, if you will simply take the rhema that God gives you and speak it out on a regular basis, He will do an “Ephesians 3:20 job” with you. Speaking in tongues for long



periods of time will also accomplish the same purpose. Speak God’s Words of life and you will reverse the curse that Adam brought in!

*Reproduction, resale or internet posting prohibited*

### Chapter 3 Grace by Inheritance.

In the previous chapter we wrote about the great Divine plan to answer man's rebellion (sin). God did not accept the religious answer that Adam and Eve attempted to provide to their new condition of separation from the life of God. They acted out their new fallen nature in shame, blame, and religion. God provided His plan, a new blood covenant, the blood transfer from Himself to his fallen creature in order to secure and re-institute oneness and inter-union of natures, by blood.

We as humans often feel that our life began when we were born. Wrong! When we were born we had already inherited our nature. We had inherited natural things, like personality, disposition, hair color, eye color, appearances, etc. We also had inherited spiritual things like blessings and curses. Therefore, our life really began with an inheritance about which we had absolutely no choice. So much of our destiny in life existed before we did.

#### **We inherited grace with God.**

What is grace? Grace with God simply means that God provides His Holy Spirit in you, the New Creation race, so that He may perform those things and provide those things for you and through you that your old Adamic nature could not have provided or performed. Grace is simply Jesus living His life in you through the Holy Spirit.

Grace by inheritance means that the provision of this grace was simply something that we obtained by inheritance, not by any works or qualifications of our own.

The Law makes demands, but Grace supplies the power.

***The grace, or free gift, of being connected to our Creator by blood covenant existed in eternity. It was God's original plan!***

When did God accomplish the blood covenant transfer? God had the solution accomplished even before the problem occurred.

**Revelation 13:8b says,**

8 “..the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.”

**1 Corinthians 2:7-8 says,**

7 “But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, the hidden wisdom which God ordained before the ages for our glory,

8 which none of the rulers of this age knew; for had they known, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.”

In a way the rulers of this age had no choice. Although God did not violate their free choice in crucifying Jesus, what they carried out was ordained and ordered before the angels; demons and Satan were ever created. They thought they had control but they were really puppets in the hand of a mighty God!

God is always ahead of Satan and ahead of us. In God’s mind, in the files of eternal history, Jesus had already taken Adam’s place as the one disconnected from God. That is why God covered Adam and Eve with coats of a slain animal, with blood. The blood represented the blood covenant, which reconnects disconnected man with God.

**What does *everlasting* mean?**

**Hebrews 13:20 says,**

20 “Now may the God of peace who brought up our Lord Jesus from the dead, that great Shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting [aioniov] covenant”

The word *everlasting* (*aioniov*) does not mean that it will last now and forever. It means eternal, which is without beginning or end, something that always existed, outside of time.

Allow me to use my imagination a bit to help us see this idea. I do admit that it is impossible for a time creature to describe what goes on in eternity, but this is as close as I can get.

Back before time, Satan rebelled and took one third of the angels with him. God may have had a conference within the Trinity that went like this:

“My beloved let Us talk. Lucifer has rebelled and has taken on evil. He has attracted many angels to join his rebellion. You all know that we have plans to create a race called Adam, or man, from the dust of a planet we are going to create called Earth. Spirit, you will dwell inside of man. Man will have a free volition (will), however, to choose to be part of us. We will do all we can to attract man with our love.

However, man will be vulnerable to Satan. Satan is going to tempt Adam to rebel and Adam will go for it. Therefore, we need to also create a second race of people even before we create Adam. We will call this second race, the New Creation. Son, this is going to cost you all. Are you willing?”

“Father, I understand that this new race will, by requirement, need to be connected by a blood covenant, that I Myself will need to become a man and dwell on Earth. I understand that I must walk the trench of blood shed on behalf of Adam and Adam's descendents because the Adam race is not able to keep the covenant with Us. Father, I understand that this must, by necessity, be My blood. Father, I will do that.”

“Son, I therefore declare you crucified before the foundation of the world. You must suffer much. I am sorry, but there is no other way. You know that in order to fulfill everything for this New Creation race, I must also forsake You, turn My back on You.”

“Father, that will be more pain than any being will ever suffer, but because of our love Father, let it be.”

I needed to express the above conversation in terms of a time-oriented person. However, we should know that God is not restricted by time. Some people say that God does “know things before they happen.” But it is not a completely true statement, it is a statement from a perspective of a time-restricted being. The word *before* would infer time. But God exists outside of time, He experiences the past, present and future simultaneously!

**Therefore two races existed when Adam was created, Adam and the New Creation. Remember, Jesus is called the Last Adam.**

We need to comprehend that God knows our future before it happens. He knows the end from the beginning. It is a fearful thing to be in union with such a Being!

Romans 5:20 has an interesting insight into this idea.

**Romans 5:20 says,**

*20 “Moreover the law entered that the offense might abound. But where sin abounded, grace abounded much more.”*

The first word “abounded” means to strike like an arrow, but the next word “abounded” means that grace was there ahead of time.

In your life, when sin strikes you, when challenges seem to overwhelm you, remember, God’s grace was there ahead of time. His grace is there to catch you, to turn the evil into a blessing!

**Isaiah 65:24 says,**

*24 “It shall come to pass that before they call, I will answer; and while they are still speaking, I will hear.”*

It is again stated in Hebrews 9:14 that our blood covenant existed before man was created.

**Hebrews 9:14 says,**

*14 “How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without spot to God, cleanse your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?”*

Our new blood union established through the blood of the everlasting covenant, the eternal covenant with the I AM, the Eternal Being. It is a gift that has an incalculable value!

It can be difficult to believe that you have inherited the nature of the I AM, the Creator God! Most Christians struggle with this amazing fact. They just cannot believe the truth, that we really do have His nature in us, that we are really reborn

creatures through the blood covenant. What is even more difficult to understand is that the I AM became one of us, a limited-time being (Philippians 2:8).

**You have a birth certificate registering your new birth.**

Psalm 87 compares the natural birth represented by Philistia and Tyre, with the supernatural birth in Zion. Zion normally stands for the supernatural Kingdom of God (Hebrews 12).

**Psalm 87:5-6 says,**

*5 “And of Zion it will be said, ‘This one and that one were born in her; and the Most High Himself shall establish her.’*

*6 The LORD will record, when He registers the peoples: ‘This one was born there.’ Selah.”*

My opinion is that all men have been given this inheritance, this new birth. Unfortunately, God has to erase many of the names before time ends.

“Grace by inheritance” can be expressed by comparing your natural birth by your natural parents. If you received great intelligence, or excellent health, or perhaps a financial inheritance, that is considered grace. You actually had nothing to do with it. It was inherited from the progenitor of your race. You did not earn it, nor did you work for it. On the other hand, if you inherited some curse from your natural parents, in the same way that did not come to you by your own efforts or sin. However you now have a new progenitor, a new inheritance. How? You have been given a blood covenant as an inheritance to accept or refuse.

**God the Father is now the progenitor of a new race, a resurrected race.**

What does “Father” really mean? W.E. Vine’s Bible Dictionary defines the Greek word “Father” as “Pater,” from a root signifying a nourisher, protector, upholder, the nearest ancestor, the progenitor of the race of people; the originator of a family or company of persons animated by the same spirit as himself. Regeneration is from two words: “palin” means again, and

“genesis” means birth. *Palingenis*, or regeneration, is actually changing who your Father is.

W.E. Vine’s Bible Dictionary also defines the word “Abba” as an Aramaic word used by infants to call their daddy. It betokens unreasoning trust, while “Father” or “Pater” expresses an intelligent apprehension of the relationship. The two together express the love and intelligent confidence of the child.

When the new birth happened in your life, your progenitor changed from Adam to God. Therefore you inherit all things from Him. That is grace!

**Titus 3:5** says,

*5 “not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to His mercy He saved us, through the washing of regeneration and renewing of the Holy Spirit.”*

You were regenerated therefore you have a new inheritance. That is grace!

However, your inter-union through the new blood covenant with your new Father is unequal. Although we were made in God’s image, He is the I AM, and we are time creatures, trapped as it were in a short breath of time. Adam and Eve were reduced, through sin, to time creatures. We inherited that nature.

**Adam and Eve had a solution already in place before they sinned. So did you! That is grace!**

Adam and Eve lost the right to the Tree of Life. They were ousted from the Garden.

**Genesis 3:24** says,

*24 “So He drove out the man; and He placed cherubim at the east of the garden of Eden, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to guard the way to the tree of life.”*

But they received the promise and the shadow of a new inheritance, a new grace, and the possibility of a new birth, a second birth experience (Genesis 3:14-15, 21).

**There is what seems to be a paradox to this idea of grace.**

Unlike your first, natural birth, you must respond to this spiritual birth that you inherit by grace. First, you must decide to accept and receive it. Then, you must do something to nurture it in order to see your new nature mature. You will be learning to maximize God's covenant in your life by renewing your mind to covenant thinking.

Now it is your choice. You have the possibility of a great inheritance, a great gift of and by grace, which you could not earn, nor do you deserve. However, you must respond in a covenant way! This is where too many people miss it. Not only do you need to respond in a blood covenant way, you must also engage in spiritual warfare against the demons under Satan whose goal is to steal your inheritance.

**There are some conditions for receiving this great “free” inheritance.**

**Jonah 2:6-10 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*6 “I went down to the bottoms and the very roots of the mountains; the earth with its bars closed behind me forever. Yet You have brought up my life from the pit and corruption, O Lord my God.*

*7 When my soul fainted upon me [crushing me], I earnestly and seriously remembered the Lord; and my prayer came to You, into Your holy temple.*

*8 Those who pay regard to false, useless, and worthless idols forsake their own [Source of] mercy and loving kindness.*

*9 But as for me, I will sacrifice to You with the voice of thanksgiving; I will pay that which I have vowed. Salvation and deliverance belong to the Lord!*

*10 And the Lord spoke to the fish, and it vomited out Jonah upon the dry land.”*

Jonah gave up his worthless idols when he was crushed. Then his trust went to the Lord, and then he was marvelously delivered with mercy and grace. The fish spat Jonah exactly



where he belonged. He obtained a free ticket by grace and landed into God's purpose.

This principle is also confirmed in the following Scripture.

**Psalm 32:10 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*32 "Many are the sorrows of the wicked, but he who trusts in, relies on, and confidently leans on the Lord [as opposed to idols] shall be compassed about with mercy and with loving-kindness."*

**We may have an inheritance legally, but we must fight for it experientially.**

**Joshua 1:2-3, 5 says,**

*2 "Moses My servant is dead. Now therefore, arise, go over this Jordan, you and all this people, to the land which I am giving to them – the children of Israel.*

*3 Every place that the sole of your foot will tread upon I have given you, as I said to Moses."*

*5 "No man shall be able to stand before you all the days of your life; as I was with Moses, so I will be with you. I will not leave you nor forsake you."*

Notice what God told Joshua. First, He said I am giving, and then, He said I have given. It was a done deal, past tense. God had given them the Promise Land. But then He added two things. First, He told Joshua that his foot would have to tread upon the land and next, He inferred to Joshua that there would be warfare in order to actually possess the promised inheritance.

Romans 8:16-17 states that we indeed are children who are joint heirs with Christ. We are heirs and therefore we have an inheritance coming. However in this passage of Scripture it is clear that we are only joint heirs if we suffer with Him. I submit that it means what it meant to Joshua, warfare.

**Romans 8:16-17 says,**

*16 "The Spirit Himself bears witness with our spirit that we are children of God,*

*17 and if children, then heirs – heirs of God and joint heirs with Christ, if indeed we suffer with Him, that we may also be glorified together.”*

The word *suffer* means to feel pain, to experience troubles and persecution.

**Grace applied to Jacob.**

In Genesis chapter 32 Jacob knew he had to confront his brother Esau who, according to history, had a determination to kill Jacob (Genesis 27:41). In this chapter it tells how Jacob attempted to bribe Esau with a huge financial gift consisting of many possessions.

However, as told in Genesis 32:24-32, Jacob had an encounter with God. Jacob wrestled with God until daybreak, and would not release Him until he received a blessing. The blessing came in the form of God touching Jacob’s thigh, the strongest part of human flesh. That touch put Jacob’s thigh out of joint for the rest of his life. This is where God renamed Jacob to Israel, from “deceiver” to “God prevails.”

This is a picture of God’s great desire to bless us by “breaking our flesh,” or our old Adamic nature, so that He may prevail in our lives. If grace is God living in us, then often times grace is increased by our old nature being decreased. We need more of Him and less of us.

Next time you experience a “breaking” in your life, give praise to God like Jacob did, do not let go of Him no matter what, and you will experience an increased presence of God in your life manifested to others.

It is interesting to note that when Jacob, now Israel, really did encounter Esau as told in Genesis chapter 33, that Esau did not want Jacob’s bribes, but rather expressed a great love for him. Do you suppose that that change in Esau’s attitude towards Jacob had to do something with God’s grace being so manifested in Jacob that Esau was overcome by the presence of God? I do.

**One major motivation for God to give you grace is that He wants to have close fellowship with you.**

He wants His love and your love to find expression with one another. This is an “ache” in the heart of our Father God. Without grace, God could not express His love for you nor could you express your love for Him.

***Love Satisfied!***

**Ephesians 2:1-10 (Amplified Bible) expresses it well,**

*1 “AND YOU [He made alive], when you were dead (slain) by [your] trespasses and sins*

*2 In which at one time you walked [habitually]. You were following the course and fashion of this world [were under the sway of the tendency of this present age], following the prince of the power of the air. [You were obedient to and under the control of] the [demon] spirit that still constantly works in the sons of disobedience [the careless, the rebellious, and the unbelieving, who go against the purposes of God].*

*3 Among these we as well as you once lived and conducted ourselves in the passions of our flesh [our behavior governed by our corrupt and sensual nature], obeying the impulses of the flesh and the thoughts of the mind [our cravings dictated by our senses and our dark imaginings]. We were then by nature children of [God's] wrath and **heirs of [His] indignation**, like the rest of mankind.*

*4 But God – so rich is He in His mercy! Because **of and in order to satisfy the great and wonderful and intense love with which He loved us,***

*5 Even when we were dead (slain) by [our own] shortcomings and trespasses, He made us alive together in fellowship and in union with Christ; [He gave us the very life of Christ Himself, the same new life with which He quickened Him, for] it is by grace (His favor and mercy which you did not deserve) that you are saved (<sup>1</sup>delivered from judgment and made partakers of Christ's salvation).*

*6 And He raised us up together with Him and made us sit down together [giving us <sup>1</sup>joint seating with Him] in the heavenly sphere [by virtue of our*

*being] in Christ Jesus (the Messiah, the Anointed One).*

*7 He did this that He might clearly demonstrate through the ages to come the immeasurable (limitless, surpassing) riches of His free grace (His unmerited favor) in [His] kindness and goodness of heart toward us in Christ Jesus.*

*8 For it is by free grace (God's unmerited favor) that you are saved (delivered from judgment and made partakers of Christ's salvation) through [your] faith. And this [salvation] is not of yourselves [of your own doing, it came not through your own striving], but it is the gift of God;*

*9 Not because of works [not the fulfillment of the Law's demands], lest any man should boast. [It is not the result of what anyone can possibly do, so no one can pride himself in it or take glory to himself.]*

*10 For we are God's [own] handiwork (His workmanship), recreated in Christ Jesus, [born anew] that we may do those good works which God predestined (planned beforehand) for us [taking paths which He prepared ahead of time], that we should walk in them [living the good life which He prearranged and made ready for us to live].”*

**Titus 3:7 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*7 [And He did it in order] that we might be justified by His grace (by His favor, wholly undeserved), that we might be acknowledged and counted as conformed to the divine will in purpose, thought, and action], and that we might **become heirs of eternal life** according to [our] hope.”*

**Now, you need to respond to the blood covenant by pursuing a relationship with Jesus. That personal living touch with Jesus is the only way you will prevail in warfare and experience the inheritance.**

God is not asking you, by your own will, to overcome the challenges in life, but He is inviting you to discipline your life, to relate to Him and get to know Him. His power will work if you do. That is grace! However, you must receive the grace by exercising relationship disciplines with God. You are already connected with Him. Legally you already have your inheritance, but experientially you must realize that through being in vital and authentic contact with God. Exercising your relationship with Him will bring the actual realization of your inheritance to you.

### **Relationship Skills and Disciplines.**

God is inviting you to discipline your life to relate to Him and get to know Him. This is how the blood covenant blessings flow into your life:

**1. Make a firm decision to pursue the relationship.** Offer yourself completely to God (Romans 12:1-2). This is our blood covenant response to a mighty blood covenant offered to us by God.

**2. Take time to listen.** You must take in His Word. Words are blood covenant containers. You must always be in a disciplined Bible study of some kind. Ask the Holy Spirit to show you.

**3. Take time to talk:** Speak your words. Some people write down their thoughts and feelings in a journal, which can be very valuable. Be gut-level honest. Honesty with your blood covenant partner Jesus will cause your sin to go on Him. You cannot and will not overcome any bondage without this gut-level honesty.

**4. Take time to talk.** Speak His Words. Read Psalms and Proverbs by the day. One discipline is to read aloud five Psalms every morning. Use the system of the calendar. As an example, on the 24<sup>th</sup> of the month read Psalms 24, 54, 84, 114 and 144. Also read Proverb 24. In this system the student will read all Psalms and Proverbs every month. Using this system renews the mind, speaks the Word to Satan, and allows the suffering believer to relate his/her emotions to the Psalmist's. Provisions can be made for months with 31 days, and for Psalm 119. God may lead you to other Scriptures to read out loud as you

progress, but this is a good start, and can be a continued blessing for the rest of your life.

**5. Obey God.** Ask God to give you something simple, something small every day that you may obey. It may be just encouraging another. It may be not driving down the same street that fed your addiction. It may be confessing your sin to Him.

***This is a big thing!***

John 14:21-23 says that when we obey His Word that He will reveal more and more of Himself to us. Once you have “seen” Jesus, your relationship with Him will no longer be a discipline, but it will be a passionate pursuit. The apostle Paul had this passion.

**Philippians 3:10 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*10 “[For my determined purpose is] that I may know Him [that I may progressively become more deeply and intimately acquainted with Him, perceiving and recognizing and understanding the wonders of His Person more strongly and more clearly], and that I may in that same way come to know the power outflowing from His resurrection [which it exerts over believers], and that I may so share His sufferings as to be continually transformed [in spirit into His likeness even] to His death, [in the hope].”*

**6. Communion.** Take communion on a regular basis. Many people take it daily.

**7. Stay in fellowship.** It is important to be in fellowship with strong Bible believing, Spirit filled believers, for refreshing and encouragement.

## Chapter 4 More About Blood Covenants

**Life, real life, is in the blood.**

**Leviticus 17:11** says,

*11 “For the life of the flesh is in the blood, and I have given it to you upon the altar to make atonement for your souls; for it is the blood that makes atonement for the soul.”*

**Western thinking compared to Eastern, Oriental, Hebrew thinking.**

Henry Clay Trumbull, for most of his life, researched blood covenants in ancient cultures, including Bible cultures. In his book, The Blood Covenant<sup>3</sup>, he states:

*From the beginning, and everywhere, blood seems to have been looked upon as pre-eminently the representative of life; as indeed, in a peculiar sense, life itself. The transference of blood from one organism to another has been counted the transference of life, with all that life includes. The inter-commingling of blood by its inter-transference has been understood as equivalent to an inter-commingling of natures. Two natures inter-commingled, by the inter-commingling of blood, have been considered as forming, thenceforward, one blood, one life, one nature, one soul – in two organisms. The inter-commingling of natures by the inter-commingling of blood has been deemed possible between man and a lower organism, - even between man and Deity, actually or by symbol; - as well as between man and his immediate fellow.*

*Blood, as life, has been looked upon as belonging, in the highest sense, to the Author of all life. The taking of life has been seen to be the prerogative of its Author; ...*

---

<sup>3</sup> Trumbull, H. Clay, *The Blood Covenant*, Impact Books Inc., Kirkwood, MO, 1975, pages 202-204.

*The heart of any living organism, as the blood-source and the blood – fountain, has been recognized as the representative of its owner's highest personality, and as the diffuser of the issues of his life and nature.*

*A covenant of blood, a covenant made by the inter-commingling of blood, has been recognized as the closest, the holiest, and the most indissoluble, compact conceivable. Such a covenant clearly involves an absolute surrender of one's separate self, and an irrevocable merging of one's individual nature into the dual, or the multiplied, personality included in the compact. Man's highest and noblest outreachings of soul have, therefore, been for such a union with the divine nature as is typified in this human covenant of blood.*

A blood covenant demands unwavering loyalty. To waiver is to die. That is one reason I believe that so many civilized Western minded thinkers have a difficult time with their relationship with God. They don't understand the absoluteness of the relationship. Many Eastern thinking Christians don't have access to good solid Bible teaching, but when they find out about the blood, they latch on to the idea with all they have.

**One who breaks the covenant does it to his/her own death.**

**Jeremiah 34:17-20 says,**

*17 'Therefore thus says the LORD: 'You have not obeyed Me in proclaiming liberty, every one to his brother and every one to his neighbor. Behold, I proclaim liberty to you,' says the LORD – 'to the sword, to pestilence, and to famine! And I will deliver you to trouble among all the kingdoms of the earth.*

*18 And I will give the men who have transgressed My covenant, who have not performed the words of the covenant which they made before Me, when they cut the calf in two and passed between the parts of it–*



*19 the princes of Judah, the princes of Jerusalem, the eunuchs, the priests, and all the people of the land who passed between the parts of the calf –*

*20 I will give them into the hand of their enemies and into the hand of those who seek their life. Their dead bodies shall be for meat for the birds of the heaven and the beasts of the earth.’”*

**What happens when you do not keep the covenant perfectly?**

God knew this would happen; therefore He walked the blood covenant ditch on behalf of man. In a later chapter we will cover the details of this from Genesis chapter 15. We will see that Abram did not walk the bloody covenant ditch, but he saw two forms of Deity in the covenant ditch. I believe that one was Jesus and the other was the Father, or perhaps the Holy Spirit. Jesus took the death of you, the covenant breaker! Then He was raised from the dead having left the Old Creation in Hell. He was raised as a New Creation, the first born of the new race.

**Galatians 3:13-14 says,**

*13 “Christ has redeemed us from the curse of the law, having become a curse for us (for it is written, “Cursed is everyone who hangs on a tree”),*

*14 that the blessing of Abraham might come upon the Gentiles in Christ Jesus, that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.”*

God cannot lie! He swore to death that He would keep that covenant, knowing that Abram and you and I would not keep it. Thus, He died for our infidelity to the covenant. What a deal!

**Hebrews 6:17-18 says,**

*17 “Thus God, determining to show more abundantly to the heirs of promise the immutability of His counsel, confirmed it by an oath,*

*18 that by two immutable things, in which it is impossible for God to lie, we might have strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold of the hope set before us.”*

**Titus 1:2 says,**

2 *“In hope of eternal life which God, who cannot lie, promised before time began.”*

**David Livingstone**

<sup>4</sup> David Livingstone, historically one of the great missionaries of modern times, in the middle 1800s determined to reach the Africans with the Gospel. On one of his efforts to go into the interior he was advised that the only way to do so would be to make a covenant with one of the chiefs. The deal was that the chief would give Livingstone his old staff with wire wrapped all around it in trade for Livingstone’s goat. Livingstone needed the goat for milk, to settle his ulcers, but his people convinced him to make the trade. They cut the covenant with blood. As David Livingstone then approached each interior tribe he would hold up the staff, and the entire tribe would bow and worship, knowing that Livingstone was in covenant with the strongest chief in the area. They understood that looking at Livingstone was the same as looking at the chief with whom he had cut covenant. What about you? Who does Satan see when he looks at you?

Malcolm Smith tells the story of a journey into an African village. On the way he stopped at a bank to exchange funds. The teller put her fingers over the counter waiting for Mr. Smith to reciprocate. After asking his guides, he discovered that this represented two people exchanging blood at the tips of their fingers to insure that no dishonesty would take place in the transaction.

The next day, Mr. Smith met the village chief, a very primitive scarcely clad man. He told the chief that God had sent him with a message for his village. When the chief asked about the message, Mr. Smith put out his fingers in the blood covenant sign. The chief was totally overwhelmed and bowed down and accepted Jesus. He could barely conceive that the Creator would cut a blood covenant with him. The entire village was transformed.

During our trips to Haiti we have heard many stories about

---

<sup>4</sup> David Livingstone, <http://home.vicnet.net.au/~neils/africa/livingstone.htm>

the culture's view of blood and covenants. Over 200 years ago, Haiti was given to Satan by the blood of a pig ritual. Voodoo and the related religions all understand the value of blood in spiritual matters. One pastor told us the story of a Voodoo priest who came to him in order to better understand his religion. The pastor had been casting out demons, and this Voodoo priest wanted to know where the power came from. The priest told the pastor that his best friend had died recently and that even the blood of a chicken could not heal him. The pastor began to tell this man about the blood of Jesus. He was gloriously saved and is now serving in the church.

### **What is a friend?**

The word “friend” in the Oriental/Hebrew culture means a blood covenant partner.

**Proverbs 18:24 (KJV) says,**

*24 “A man that hath friends must shew himself friendly: and there is a friend that sticketh closer than a brother.”*

Many cultures that still appreciate blood covenants have a saying, “Blood is thicker than water.” The water they refer to is the birth water of the mother, indicating that blood covenant friends are more closely related than children of the same mother. Another way they say it is, “Blood is thicker than milk.”

“Friend” is covenant language. It means the most intimate, loyal and strongest inter-union between two beings. When Jesus called Judas “friend” in the Garden of Gethsemane, He was indicting him of breaking the blood covenant.

**John 15:15 (KJV) says,**

*15 “Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth; but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you.”*

The Mafia does business with blood covenant relationships. If a Mafia member speaks against his brother, his life will be taken. That gives us some kind of a clue of how we should be

speaking of our blood covenant brothers and sisters. I dare not speak a negative word against one, lest I am speaking against Jesus and will be judged!

Shaking hands is a blood covenant gesture. Originally blood was passed between the two parties in the grasp, each guaranteeing that the other would not be hurt.

Kissing is a blood covenant act. Notice that Judas kissed Jesus during the betrayal. When one kisses he/she can only kiss one person and that speaks of exclusivity. When one kisses on the lips, then it is codified as a two-way exclusive relationship. Be careful whom you kiss. Many godly people feel that it is wrong to kiss *anyone* on the mouth that is not your spouse, not even your children.

The word remembrance is a very powerful word.

**Luke 22:19 says,**

*19 “And He took bread, gave thanks and broke it, and gave it to them, saying, ‘This is My body which is given for you; do this in remembrance of Me.’”*

Vine’s Complete Expository Dictionary defines the word *remembrance* as follows: “it denotes an unassisted recalling, a remembrance prompted by another, however in classical Greek the words are easily interchangeable. This denotes His presence, not in memory of, but in affectionate calling of the Person Himself to mind; an awakening of the mind to the sacrifices under the Law [the blood].”

Malcolm Smith in his book The Blood Covenant,<sup>5</sup> makes the following statements about the word *remember*.

*The word “remember,” in covenant language, means to take appropriate and obligatory action. The covenant meal punctuates our lives with all He has done and all that we must now do in the power of that finished work. It must never be thought of as an attempt to imagine the sufferings of Jesus and work up emotional sadness. Revelation 4 and 5 are the*

---

<sup>5</sup> Smith, Malcolm, *The Blood Covenant*. San Antonio, TX: Malcolm Smith Ministries, 1990

*mentality of a service when the triumphant Lamb is covenantally remembered. Because of the nature of the remembering, it is a time to deal with anything in our lives and relationships that contradict the covenant we are celebrating.*

**A new vision for taking communion.**

In the taking of communion we are to picture and remember in our mind, in our imagination, Jesus walking the blood covenant trench on behalf of Abraham and us. We are to picture Jesus on the Cross taking the stripes and torture and bleeding for us. We are to remember His blood. We are to remember to take up our cross, to offer ourselves to Him as a living sacrifice. And finally we are to remember who we are in the resurrection power and New Birth.

**Remember who you are. It is all about your identity.**

If we truly meditate upon the Word of God as it applies to the blood covenant, we will eventually know who we are in fact and in truth! Most faith and behavior issues with Christians stem from the fact that they have never really believed in their hearts who God has made them to be through the blood covenant.

My wife has always said to our children, even our adult children, as they went out the door, “Remember who you are!”

As I was taking communion recently, the Lord said to me, “Larry, as you take this remember who *you* are.” This was a reminder to me that the elements of the covenant are to remind us of the wonderful work that was done in order to regenerate us from sinners to New Creation beings. It is to remind us that we have been crucified with Christ, and have already been raised from the dead in Him. We are also to “remember” who we are in the spiritual sense.

In 1 Corinthians 11 Paul gives a warning that many believers are suffering needlessly and even dying at an early age because of taking communion unworthily.

**1 Corinthians 11:29-31 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*29 “For anyone who eats and drinks without discriminating and recognizing with due appreciation*

*that [it is Christ's] body, eats and drinks a sentence (a verdict of judgment) upon himself.*

*30 That [careless and unworthy participation] is the reason many of you are weak and sickly, and quite enough of you have fallen into the sleep of death.*

*31 For if we searchingly examined ourselves [detecting our shortcomings and recognizing our own condition], we should not be judged and penalty decreed [by the divine judgment].”*

A lot can be said about this statement. I am sure that there is more to this statement than I even care to discuss here. I am going to share this idea of “Christ’s body” in two aspects.

***1. The universal Body of Christ, the body of believers in the world.***

It is dangerous to be loose or double minded about God’s blood covenant family. Paul had admonished these people for at least three things: 1) being in disunity, 2) harboring an ungodly behavior prior to taking the communion, and 3) for “not rightly discerning” or, as it says in the Amplified Bible, “without discriminating and recognizing with due appreciation that [it is Christ’s] body.” I have seen men of God suffer needlessly because they treated the earthly Body of Christ in a disrespectful way.

***2. Your body as Christ’s possession.***

You know that you are the temple of the Holy Spirit. Your body is not yours but Christ’s. When you put harmful substances into your body, you are not recognizing with due appreciation that it is Christ’s body, and you are putting judgment on yourself. Imagine if you were looking at the Temple of God in front of you. You see white fire and smoke with loud noises coming forth from the Holy of Holies. Can you imagine yourself walking up to this Temple and writing graffiti on its walls with a paintbrush?

We should not be presumptuous with our bodies. When we take in harmful substances we should not wonder why God does not heal us. We should be careful with our sugar intake, our chemical intake, and our overall dietary habits. We should not

use tobacco products, drugs and/or alcohol. We need to exercise, eat plenty of fiber, fruits and vegetables, and have a balanced diet. In this year of 2006, millions of Americans, even youngsters are beginning to suffer for the first time with Sugar Diabetes much of which is traced to lack of exercise and bad diets.

***My testimony about alcohol consumption.***

Please take what I say here with mercy and grace, as what I say is primarily my personal testimony and is not intended to be absolute doctrine for the Body of Christ.

I have read scientific studies, which show that alcohol consumption, even in the smallest amounts, contributes to and even causes many types of cancer in adults, and deformities in babies while in the womb. Medical people who deal with brain issues have told me that even small intakes of alcohol destroy brain cells. Ask a nurse who cares for dementia patients in a nursing home setting. They have personally shown me patients who have been so affected. Ask a Christian believer in Africa or Haiti who has been delivered from witchcraft. He will tell you how his former slave masters kept him in bondage with alcohol.

Some people have called me “religious” and intolerant for such a belief. I can only say what the Lord has revealed to me and spoken to me for my own life. He spoke to me, I believe, for my own benefit. I feel compelled to share it here, perhaps for your benefit as well.

He told me, just a few months after He saved me, that any intake of alcohol in my life would replace the joy of the Holy Spirit that He wanted to give to me. His voice was clear; I had no other influence or voice in my life on this subject.

Prior to meeting the Lord, I was a “social drinker.” I personally know the damage that even moderate drinking will do, and I have witnessed the destruction of relationships and lives due to the influence of alcohol.

Having said all of that, *I do not let* disagreements on this subject overrule the wonderful relationships I have with many precious brothers and sisters who do disagree with me. This issue is important to me but it may not be for them. We simply respect one another’s opinions and preferences. I never wish to

make anyone feel condemned or even argumentative on this matter; it is not worth it. I will not argue this subject because it is not worth the strife and division it could cause. I just state my testimony here for those who may be seekers. Ask God to speak to you about this subject.

*So why did Jesus make wine? See endnote.<sup>1</sup>*

God is Holy! If you wish to partake in the benefits of the covenant then be holy, be like He is! Treat His earthly Body properly. Don't criticize and gossip. Don't talk negatively, don't harbor ungodly thoughts rather take them to the Cross. Submit to your proper authorities, tithe, give to the poor, be unselfish, love your enemies, live a life of love, and don't judge others. When you don't live up to the pattern, then judge yourself, confess your sin, and Jesus will cleanse you. Be very prayerful about what you put into your body. If you want to change, ask Jesus to baptize you in His Holy Spirit and fire!

Remember who God is. Jesus made it clear that we partake of the covenant by His Words. Read this Scripture again and let it soak in.

**John 6:53-56 says,**

*53 "Then Jesus said to them, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, you have no life in you.*

*54 Whoever eats My flesh and drinks My blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day.*

*55 For My flesh is food indeed, and My blood is drink indeed.*

*56 He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him.'"*

**John 6:63 says,**

*63 "It is the Spirit who gives life; the flesh profits nothing. The words that I speak to you are spirit, and they are life."*

Trust God's Word, it is His covenant transfer agent to you. Heaven and earth may pass away but His Word will stand forever! The reason many Christians cannot trust God's Word is



that they cannot trust their own words. They are by nature disloyal people and liars. If that is you, don't fret, just get honest and repent. God will honor your honesty and repentance.

**How to respond to a blood covenant. Intimacy!**

We have an inheritance through the blood covenant that is so great that sometimes it is difficult to believe. We have grace by inheritance, but we must position ourselves and respond in a covenant manner to receive the inheritance. Satan is trying to block it, but Jesus is our Judge, Advocate, and our Mediator.

The idea of not violating your own body with harmful substances, as I just wrote, is not a legalistic ritual, but rather a preparation for intimacy. Our typical Christian thinking often focuses more on God's redemption than on His original design for us. Redemption is powerful and we do need to appreciate the vast price that Jesus paid for it. However, at the same time let us not neglect God's original purpose. Redemption is to bring us back to God's original purpose, which I believe is the fulfilling of God's good pleasure of enjoying intimacy with us His creation.

God cut and established the blood covenant with you so that He could have intimacy with you. He designed man in His own image, and His image includes a deep longing for intimacy. Too many people, even too many Christians miss this idea. The Father wants intimacy with His children, and His children need intimacy with their Father.

I have seen people all over the world whose minds and emotions are so wounded, that among other things, they cannot enjoy intimacy with their spouses. This is simply because their father and/or mother never gave them the intimacy they required and craved. The intimacy I am referring to is in no way limited to sexual activity. True intimacy may include that, but it goes way beyond it as well.

My wife and I have both somewhat taken this father issue for granted. We both have had a great relationship with wonderful fathers who gave us the love and affection we needed. It is only by seeing others who are suffering and are wounded by the lack of the father's proper role have we been aware of the

healing that is needed. Even if your father and/or mother did not give you the proper intimacy that you needed, God the Father is now standing here to heal you through His grace and forgiveness.

I have been amazed at the countless numbers of Christians who are really surprised by the fact that God wants His voice to be heard by them, and vice versa. They know that God speaks through His word perhaps, but they cannot believe that God would have a personal, custom word, right from His lips to them personally. This is called a rhema. It is when the Holy Spirit takes the general Word of God, the logos, and makes it alive and personal, converting to a rhema. ‘*Rhema*’ means ‘from God’s own lips.’

**Psalm 5:3 says,**

*3 “My voice You shall hear in the morning, O LORD; In the morning I will direct it to You, And I will look up.”*

**Revelation 3:20 says,**

*20 “Behold, I stand at the door and knock. If anyone hears My voice and opens the door, I will come in to him and dine with him, and he with Me.”*

The original meaning for the word *voice* is defined in the Strong’s Dictionary as:

*fone phone {fo-nay'} the idea of disclosure; to be seen, to appear to shine, to be real and manifested. A tone, a song, the sound of uttered words, a language, a tongue.*

When you hear His voice in this way, it results in intimacy. Worship is spontaneous. The Father responds with affirmations of love, and you respond with more worship, surrender, and love. Through this process, your character begins to change into His image. His Word is embedded into your heart, and it brings forth fruit, which glorifies Him.

**Malachi 4:6 says,**

6 “*And he will turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the hearts of the children to their fathers, lest I come and strike the earth with a curse.*”

I believe, that God wants us to respond to the wonderful covenant of blood by becoming intimate with Him, your new Father. You may recall in the previous chapter we discussed the idea that we have a new Father.

Recall what I wrote in the previous chapter about God the Father. He is Pater, our ancestor the originator of our race, and He is also Abba, our affectionate daddy. The two together express the love and intelligent confidence of the child. Is He a disciplinarian? Yes, but only after He makes you confident in His love and grace. And His discipline is for your protection.

***A personal testimony.***

I have learned a lesson first hand in the past few months as I have been re-writing this chapter in 2010. We are helping our daughter take care of twin boys who were born pre-mature. As most people know, newborn babies cry a lot, and often it is not something that can be resolved by feeding or burping. I have discovered that these babies quickly quiet down as we nurture them close to us. When these infants feel the physical touch of their Grandpa, me, and their Grandma Carol (nicknamed PaPa and Jama), they get easy, calm down, and fall asleep. I have also noticed that they are becoming close to their Father God even at this early age by responding in a positive sense to worship music. Often when nothing else will calm them, precious worship music will put them in peace and then sleep.

**Your Heavenly Father wants to do the same for you!**

## Chapter 5

### Do Not Count the Blood Covenant as a Common Thing

**Being in blood covenant with the Almighty Creator is a serious matter!**

***A warning against synchronizing your worldly customs with the blood covenant.***

This world's system has many customs that get into people even without thought or decision on their part. These can include, but are not limited to, customs about personal honesty, about how to handle money, how to relate in marriage, how to raise children, how to speak and use words, and many traditions about sexual activity. You need to recognize that as a believer that you are not to operate your life according to the world's system and your culture. To be a believer in Jesus Christ and at the same time to operate in the world's system and culture is called synchronism. It is widespread all over the world, in Third World countries as well as more modernized nations.

***Perhaps the most prevalent issue of synchronism is lying, not being totally honest about everything.***

Jesus' name is Truth. You cannot have a blood covenant relationship with Truth when you yourself are not truthful in all things. The world's system is based upon lying. Its very foundation is a lie. Satan is named the Father of lies (John 8:44). You choose whose child you are by choosing to be truthful in all things or to depend upon a lie. People lie in order to survive some challenges in life, whether they are financial, personal, social matters, or anything else. Lying is the survival tool for the world's system. Lying brings a curse to your life for sure.

***Your own personal honesty.***

***Someone said, "No one is so blind as someone who does not want to see the truth."***

Before Jesus saved me, I depended upon lying to a great degree. It was not so much lying to other people. I tried to keep that as honest as possible, but not 100%. The real issue was that I had been lying to myself for decades. I was deceived by my own lie to myself.

God can only work with total “gut level” honesty! Any untruth or lie is an invitation for Satan to work. It is a hook that he may get a hold of and manipulate your life. Here are just a few Scriptures that testify about being honest. Your personal honesty is one of the major things that will determine your eternal destiny. Do not take it lightly!

**Psalm 51:6** says,

6 *“Behold, You desire truth in the inward parts, and in the hidden part You will make me to know wisdom.”*

***You cannot have fellowship with God nor have your sins cleansed without truth.***

**1 John 1:7** says,

7 *“But if we walk in the light as He is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin.”*

***You cannot come to the Father God without truth.***

**John 14:6** says,

6 *“Jesus said to him, ‘I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me.’”*

***You cannot hear God’s voice without truth.***

**John 18:37** says,

37 *“Pilate therefore said to Him, ‘Are You a king then?’ Jesus answered, ‘You say rightly that I am a king. For this cause I was born, and for this cause I have come into the world, that I should bear witness to the truth. Everyone who is of the truth hears My voice.’”*

***God will not hear your prayers if your lips are deceitful.***

**Psalm 17:1** says,

1 *“Hear a just cause, O LORD, Attend to my cry; Give ear to my prayer which is not from deceitful lips.”*

***God cannot dwell with you without you being truthful.***

**John 14:17 says,**

17 “the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it neither sees Him nor knows Him; but you know Him, for He dwells with you and will be in you.”

***You cannot come into intimacy with God without truth.***

**Psalm 24:2-4 says,**

2 “For He has founded it upon the seas, and established it upon the waters.

3 Who may ascend into the hill of the LORD? Or who may stand in His holy place?

4 He who has clean hands and a pure heart, who has not lifted up his soul to an idol, nor sworn deceitfully.”

**Revelation 21:8 says,**

8 “But the cowardly, unbelieving, abominable, murderers, sexually immoral, sorcerers, idolaters, and all liars shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death.”

***Jesus hid the truth from those who do not love the truth!***

**Mark 4:11-12 (Amplified Bible) says,**

11 “And He said to them, To you has been entrusted the mystery of the kingdom of God [that is, the secret counsels of God which are hidden from the ungodly]; but for those outside [of our circle] everything becomes a parable,

12 In order that they may [indeed] look and look but not see and perceive, and may hear and hear but not grasp and comprehend, lest haply they should turn again, and it [their willful rejection of the truth] should be forgiven them.”

***We are warned that eventually, if we continue to ignore the truth, that God Himself will make sure that we are totally blinded to truth.***

**2 Thessalonians 2:9-12 says,**

*9 “The coming of the lawless one is according to the working of Satan, with all power, signs, and lying wonders,*

*10 and with all unrighteous deception among those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth, that they might be saved.*

*11 And for this reason God will send them strong delusion, that they should believe the lie,*

*12 that they all may be condemned who did not believe the truth but had pleasure in unrighteousness.”*

**The conscience.**

Why is it that eventually we will not even know that we are lying but will be totally blinded, and actually believe that our lies are the truth?

As Watchman Nee has written, there are three functions of our spirit. They are conscience, intuition, and communion. These three work together to give us the potential to have intimacy with our Father God utilizing our own free will.

Communion, not meaning the act of taking bread and juice, but rather the act of intimacy with God, is there as a potential.

Intuition is the means whereby we have this communion. Our communication with God is not really at the mind or emotion level, but rather at the intuition of the heart. Certainly we can read the Word of God and understand it with our mind, but in order to really hear God speak to us His personal word, or rhema, it must come through your intuition.

Conscience is where our free will comes in. God gave us our conscience so that we would intuitively know right from wrong. It was set up to give us the free will to either love the truth or not love it.

For instance, if you steal money, your conscience is supposed to convict you of sin. If you have a healthy conscience

you will receive that conviction. You may then either confess your sin, be cleansed and turn from it, or attempt to pacify your conscience with the argument, that God knew you needed the funds, and therefore He understand and forgives you. You lean on His “grace,” and argue your way out of being honest.

***That is when the danger begins!***

Your conscience is set up to become less and less functional the more you compromise with your honesty. Your intimacy (communion) with God becomes less intense. He is attempting to get your attention on the matter of being dishonest, and you keep compromising and justifying. As this continues, your conscience becomes “seared,” or numbed to the point that as 2 Thessalonians says, God will send you a strong delusion that you will actually believe the lie (2 Thessalonians 2:11).

***How do you then begin to live?***

Many people back away from God at this point, and even begin the backsliding process. I believe that the backsliding from grace can be eternally dangerous.

Others become religious and attempt to satisfy their conscience by doing good works. I see a lot of this!

**Titus 1:15 says,**

*15 “To the pure all things are pure, but to those who are defiled and unbelieving nothing is pure; but even their mind and conscience are defiled.”*

**Hebrews 9:14 says,**

*14 “how much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without spot to God, cleanse your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?”*

**1 Timothy 4:2 says,**

*2 “speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their own conscience seared with a hot iron.”*

**1 Timothy 1:19 says,**



19 *“having faith and a good conscience, which some having rejected, concerning the faith have suffered shipwreck.”*

**John 8:9** says,

9 *“Then those who heard it, being convicted by their conscience, went out one by one, beginning with the oldest even to the last. And Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.”*

**Acts 24:16 (Amplified Bible)** says,

16 *“Therefore I always exercise and discipline myself [mortifying my body, deadening my carnal affections, bodily appetites, and worldly desires, endeavoring in all respects] to have a clear (unshaken, blameless) conscience, void of offense toward God and toward men.”*

***Frogs can be deceived. So can you!***

You can boil a live frog by putting it into warm water and then heating it up little by little. Pretty soon, before the frog can respond by jumping out, the water is boiling and the frog dies.

**Hebrews chapter 10 gives us a serious warning!**

The following passage of Scripture in Hebrews chapter 10, in my opinion, is a serious warning against synchronism. It is in the context of comparing the Law of Moses with its commands and ordinances, with the wonderful grace we have in Jesus. It differentiates between the Old and the New Covenant. It reminds us that those who did not take the Old Covenant seriously perished eternally. Then it states that if we, in the New Covenant, willfully continue to sin, or in other words, practice synchronism after we have seen the Truth, we are subject to a much worse judgment. It states (through the original translation of words) that such a person is actually insulting the grace of God and the Blood Covenant.

I also believe that this portion of Scripture does apply to money issues as well as others. Its context infers that we should

have endurance to believe God's promises to take care of us financially, and that those who give up and practice the habits of mammon will suffer a great and horrible future.

Most believers who do not trust in God's promises to take care of them, but rather resort to deceit, lying, manipulation and other practices that the world utilizes for the handling of money, do not realize that they are on a backsliding trip that is slow but sure. After some time, those people's consciences are seared so that they no longer are even aware of their wrongdoing. That condition leads them to further sin unknowingly. It continues to progress until such time when they no longer control their own actions but are given over to perdition.

Hebrews 10:11-39 explains that under the Old Covenant the blood of bulls and goats could not cleanse the conscience. However, under the New Covenant, when the Law is put into our hearts, our conscience will be cleansed by His blood so we could have intimacy with Him in the Holy of Holies.

**Hebrews 10:11-22, 26-31 says,**

*11 "And every priest stands ministering daily and offering repeatedly the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins.*

*12 But this Man, after He had offered one sacrifice for sins forever, sat down at the right hand of God,*

*13 from that time waiting till His enemies are made His footstool.*

*14 For by one offering He has perfected forever those who are being sanctified.*

*15 But the Holy Spirit also witnesses to us; for after He had said before*

*16 'This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, says the LORD: I will put My laws into their hearts, and in their minds I will write them,'*

*17 then He adds, 'Their sins and their lawless deeds I will remember no more.'*

*18 Now where there is remission of these, there is no longer an offering for sin.*

*19 Therefore, brethren, having boldness to enter the Holiest by the blood of Jesus,*

*20 by a new and living way which He consecrated for us, through the veil, that is, His flesh,*

*21 and having a High Priest over the house of God,*

*22 let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience and our bodies washed with pure water.”*

*26 “For if we sin willfully after we have received the knowledge of the truth, there no longer remains a sacrifice for sins,*

*27 but a certain fearful expectation of judgment, and fiery indignation which will devour the adversaries.*

*28 Anyone who has rejected Moses’ law dies without mercy on the testimony of two or three witnesses.*

*29 Of how much worse punishment, do you suppose, will he be thought worthy who has trampled the Son of God underfoot, counted the blood of the covenant by which he was sanctified a common thing, and insulted the Spirit of grace?*

*30 For we know Him who said, ‘Vengeance is Mine, I will repay,’ says the Lord. And again, ‘The LORD will judge His people.’*

*31 It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.”*

I so often define grace as simply the Father, and the Son Jesus living inside of your mortal body through the Holy Spirit. Just imagine God inside of you being insulted by the fact that He has given you the power to live a holy life and to have all of your needs cared for by Him, and you are ignoring that truth and adapting the ways of God’s enemy, the ways of the world and mammon, as your source of life.

**Financial issues can affect your conscience more than anything.**

Another prevalent cultural issue is about mishandling money. Actually, its root is really based upon lying. Jesus spoke very often about money. He warned that there could really be no synchronism with serving God and money, and that you could only serve one or the other. In Matthew 6 Jesus linked your conscience with money matters.

**Matthew 6:19-24 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*19 “Do not gather and heap up and store up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust and worm consume and destroy, and where thieves break through and steal.*

*20 But gather and heap up and store for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust nor worm consume and destroy, and where thieves do not break through and steal;*

*21 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.*

*22 The eye is the lamp of the body. So if your eye is sound, your entire body will be full of light.*

*23 But if your eye is unsound, your whole body will be full of darkness. If then the very light in you [your conscience] is darkened, how dense is that darkness!*

*24 No one can serve two masters; for either he will hate the one and love the other, or he will stand by and be devoted to the one and despise and be against the other. You cannot serve God and mammon (deceitful riches, money, possessions, or whatever is trusted in).”*

Notice Jesus said, that it is impossible to serve God and at the same time operate in the world's system of finance, here referred to as mammon (wealth, personified). I speculate that mammon may be more than just a custom of the world's way of handling money, and that it possibly is even a strong demonic being who heads up this system.

It is eternally dangerous to attempt to live in the worldly ways of money, which is mammon. I believe that Scripture tells us that it can lead to eternal destruction and damnation even for believers, a condition often referred to as backsliding. I realize that this is a controversial subject, therefore I simply submit Scripture and am asking the Holy Spirit as I write to illuminate to each of you the truth of this as a protection for your eternal well being.

In this book and in most of my writings I refer to living our lives in a manner described as “walking in the Spirit.” It means that we know that we are not perfect yet, that we need to be hungry for holiness and righteousness, and when we sin in life we should immediately confess and repent and hate our sinful activity and/or thoughts. This type of living, in my opinion, pleases the Lord. However, walking in the Spirit is not to be confused with willfully sinning and willfully walking and living according to the traditions and customs of the world’s system, especially mammon.

**A personal testimony.**

One of the misunderstood characteristics of God is His integrity. “*Integrity*” comes from the word “*integer*”, which means whole number. An integer does not have a fraction, it is whole and complete. Integrity carries the meaning of being pure, upright, honest, whole, congruent, finished, complete, and honorable. A person of integrity is pure; he is not mixed with some truth and some deceit. He is not mixed with some honesty and some dishonesty.

God is a person of integrity and He desires to work that characteristic into us as we mature in Him. Sometimes people start to walk with the Lord after living without integrity and they assume that God is just like them. However, God wants to change us into His likeness; into people of integrity.

The first thing that God began to work in my life, after He became the Lord of my life, was to rid me of all dishonesty and lack of integrity.

**Matthew 5:8 says,**

8 *“Blessed are the pure [not mixed, integrity] in heart, for they shall see God.”*

***If you really want to see God, seek a pure heart!***

I had only known the Lord for about six months when He began to reveal things to me from my past that needed restitution. I had habitually underpaid my government income taxes before I became a Christian (just call it cheating). The Lord directed me to pay back all that I had cheated the government.

The amount I estimated was more than I could have paid back, but I told my accountant to make the necessary adjustments anyway. He advised me not to do it, as it was his opinion that I would never be caught. I told him that God had already caught me. He did not know what to think about that! He went ahead and reported the back amounts. I have since changed accountants!

As it turned out, that was the year when the new tax laws provided for massive tax credits for the employment of students. I owned a retail business and had employed dozens of students. The tax credits totally wiped out the amounts I owed.

In addition, the Lord gave me the promise in Matthew 17:27, which says:

*“Nevertheless, lest we offend them, go to the sea, cast in a hook, and take the fish that comes up first. And when you have opened its mouth, you will find a piece of money; take that and give it to them for Me and you.”*

Each and every year since then (1980), I have received a miracle of some kind when it came time to pay my taxes! I call it “finding a fish with a coin in its mouth” for me. My new accountant loves to watch for the “fish” every year!

***Money is one of the most important measures of our dedication to God.***

He told the Rich Young Ruler in Matthew 19, that his religion, power, influence and youth would not gain eternal life for him. In fact, He told him that all of those things in which he

trusted could keep him from eternal life. Jesus told him to give all he had to the poor and come follow Him. The Ruler would not do as Jesus said. God does not always ask us to give away all of our money, but He does want us to subordinate whatever we have that could be taking the place of God. This man was trusting in “other gods.”

Jesus never asked me to give my money away, but I surely did. Looking back, I can see that it was the Lord that had influenced me. I got into a giving frenzy when I first came to God. It made some people mad, but God spoke to me when the last cent was gone. He said, “Now you have sown what is corruptible, and you will reap the incorruptible” (1 Corinthians 15). I can tell you that since 1979, God has been faithful to what He said to me! There were many times when it did not look as if He would be faithful, but He always was.

***God does indeed desire prosperity for you.*** However, He is more interested in your character and integrity than He is in your financial comfort. The word “prosperity” carries the root meaning of integrity. You cannot have Godly prosperity without integrity.

**3 John 1:2 says,**

*2 “Beloved, I pray that you may prosper in all things and be in health, just as your soul prospers.”*

I have learned that prosperity in the soul always comes first and is the most important issue. Any material prosperity that God has designed for your life will be an outflow of the prosperity of your soul.

Material prosperity can mean something different for each culture, but to God I believe it has a very simple definition: having enough resources to execute your God calling, and having enough left over to give to the poor and to the Gospel. We are also called to bless Israel!

## Chapter 6 Cain and Abel

The first two children of Adam and Eve were named Cain and Abel. Abel raised sheep and Cain had a garden with fruit and vegetables. In my opinion, at that time God had not yet given permission for mankind to eat meat; that came after the flood with Noah. That being true, Abel must have been raising the sheep for clothing and offering only. This is what he had learned from his mom and dad. The relationship between Cain and Abel should have been one of trading altar animals for vegetables to eat, but apparently Cain felt that he did not need a blood covenant offering.

**Genesis 4:1-4 says,**

*1 “Now Adam knew Eve his wife, and she conceived and bore Cain, and said, ‘I have acquired a man from the LORD.’*

*2 Then she bore again, this time his brother Abel. Now Abel was a keeper of sheep, but Cain was a tiller of the ground.*

*3 And in the process of time it came to pass that Cain brought an offering of the fruit of the ground to the LORD.*

*4 Abel also brought of the firstborn of his flock and of their fat. And the LORD respected Abel and his offering.”*

The Lord God accepted Abel’s animal offering and the blood that was shed. The Lord God did not accept Cain’s fruit offering.

Adam and Eve taught both boys to bring an animal offering to God for their sin so that they could be connected to God and be blood covenant friends with Him. It is interesting to note however that Eve’s hope was in Abel and not Cain. Do you think that it was a mother’s intuition? Look what Eve said.

**Genesis 4:25 says,**

*25 “And Adam knew his wife again, and she bore a son and named him Seth, ‘For God has appointed*



*another seed for me instead of Abel, whom Cain killed.’”*

**Religion verses blood covenant relationship.**

Cain tried to please God with his fruit. God required a blood sacrifice. Abel brought his blood sacrifice. Cain was using “religion.” Certainly, Cain had heard of the fig leaf attempt that did not work. The thing that really puzzles me is: How Cain could have actually heard God speak and in spite of that still attempted to placate this wonderful and fearful God with an offering from the fruit of the ground? The ground was cursed. Man did not need some kind of religious appeasement with God, he needed to be re-connected to His Spirit and that only by a complete exchange of character; man’s for God’s and God’s for man’s. God had to take on man’s sinful nature and die with it. Only then could man possess his true identity. Life is in the blood!

*The blood is a gift. Everything else is works.*

Jesus’ blood for our righteousness is a gift. Our works, even the fruit of the ground, cannot bring us back into intimacy with God. The blood that Jesus shed on the Cross was sufficient to put us back into intimate touch with our Father God, Hebrews 9 and 10.

**What a merciful God! God gave Cain an opportunity to repent**

**Genesis 4:6-7 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*6 “And the Lord said to Cain, ‘Why are you angry? And why do you look sad and depressed and dejected?*

*7 If you do well, will you not be accepted? And if you do not do well, sin crouches at your door; its desire is for you, but you must master it.’”*

***That word “master” means to take dominion over and rule.***

How could he have taken dominion over sin? Cain could have taken dominion over the temptation to sin by taking his

feelings and thoughts to the blood, or in our case, to the Cross. God gave Cain another chance to shed blood in respect of his need and in respect to the covenant, but Cain rejected the idea. Even when we act against God's character He gives us a chance to clear things up with Him. We cover this idea more at the end of this chapter.

***Conscience compromised.***

I submit that because Cain did not obey God that his conscience was compromised. I believe that is why he was able to kill his brother.

**Genesis 4:8 says,**

8 “*Now Cain talked (it means to strive and argue) with Abel his brother; and it came to pass, when they were in the field, that Cain rose up against Abel his brother and killed him.*”

I believe that much of what we see in human nature, without God and in the world today, is depicted in this event.

1. Jealousy and envy are the same as murder.
2. The other religions of this world hate those who depend upon Christ Jesus and His blood as the atonement for their sins.
3. This story shows how God is just and fair to give even potential murders the opportunity to come under His blood, grace and forgiveness.
4. Even some Christians who do not come to God in their honesty and ask for forgiveness have hatred towards other believers who do depend upon the blood.

***What is the sentence or judgment for a murderer?***

**1 Corinthians 3:17 says**

17 “*If anyone defiles the temple of God, God will destroy him. For the temple of God is holy, which temple you are.*”

***Cain's dilemma.***

Look at Cain's dilemma. He could no longer be prosperous in agriculture, he could no longer enjoy God's presence, he would be a fugitive and a vagabond, a person who shakes with fear and wanders.

**Genesis 4:9-15 says,**

9 “Then the LORD said to Cain, ‘Where is Abel your brother?’ He said, ‘I do not know. Am I my brother's keeper?’

10 And He said, ‘What have you done? The voice of your brother’s blood cries out to Me from the ground.

11 So now you are cursed from the earth, which has opened its mouth to receive your brother’s blood from your hand.

12 When you till the ground, it shall no longer yield its strength to you. A fugitive and a vagabond you shall be on the earth.’

13 And Cain said to the LORD, ‘My punishment is greater than I can bear!

14 Surely You have driven me out this day from the face of the ground; I shall be hidden from Your face; I shall be a fugitive and a vagabond on the earth, and it will happen that anyone who finds me will kill me.’

15 And the LORD said to him, ‘Therefore, whoever kills Cain, vengeance shall be taken on him sevenfold.’ And the LORD set a mark on Cain, lest anyone finding him should kill him.”

**The blood cursed and disabled the murderer’s abilities.**

Notice, Cain’s “ground” was cursed, the very venue that he used for murder. The blood of his victim disabled Cain’s ability to carry out his mission and vocation in life. How much more does the blood of Jesus, which was poured out on Satan's ground, disable Satan?

**Hebrews 12:24 says,**

24 “[T]o Jesus the Mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling that speaks better things than that of Abel.”

**Abel’s blood spoke for vengeance, Jesus’ blood speaks for mercy.**

While Abel's blood spoke for vengeance on Cain, Jesus' blood speaks for mercy for all humans. However, Jesus' blood speaks for vengeance for His spiritual enemies, Satan and his whole crowd.

***Our “blood” also speaks!***

***The blood of Jesus and even your blood defeats enemies.***

However, our “blood,” much like Abel's, can also “speak” against Satan. Each time we “take up our cross,” each time we forgive, refuse to blame, bless our enemies, refuse to engage in the things of this world, our “blood” speaks, curses and disables Satan's activities in our lives. It is so interesting that the very worst thing that our enemies can throw at us will actually give us victory!

This also applies to the sufferings and challenges that affect our lives. We know that God is not the author of sufferings, however, He does have a law in place that is very valuable for us to know.

***When someone “takes your blood, your life,” it defeats the blood taker.***

As you overcome that suffering or challenge, another group of demons and/or curses are defeated! What an awesome God we serve!

***This is what I call the “Blood Law.”***

I believe that this law of the blood, even your “blood” defeating your enemies, was in existence before the universe was formed.

**Revelation 13:8 b says,**

***8b “...the Book of Life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.”***

When Jesus took up His cross to shed His blood, it was the blood of His divine nature. When we take up our cross, the “blood” that we shed is the blood of the Adamic nature. However, they both defeat Satan and his demons.

**How can we become an “Abel” and avoid being a “Cain?”**

How do we “bring the blood sacrifice” to God and not bring Him our “home grown vegetables?” By exercising our daily

relationship skills. We take our thoughts captive (2 Corinthians 10:4) and bring them to Him, to His Cross. We bring our sin to the Cross and we take up our cross by denying our fleshly desires and thoughts. We bring our ungodly desires and feelings to Him in honesty; we obey the Word. When we fail, we come back to Him and receive unmerited grace! This is the “blood life,” the covenant life. Often in my life, I have seen immediate results. The black cloud lifts and His presence manifests. But even if I do not sense an immediate manifestation of His presence, I know my reward is on the way. 2 Corinthians 10:4-6 commands us to take our thoughts captive. I say that we should take our thoughts captive for the death penalty, and not for a life sentence!

***Is there more than one way to commit a murder?***

***Hatred is murder according to Jesus.***

The only way you can deal with hatred is to forgive the one you hate. Actually, if you even harbor resentment and unforgiveness you qualify. This is why unforgiveness is so dangerous! When you speak against your blood covenant partner (husband, wife, or other believer), you are a murderer.

Remember, the one who murders is the blood taker and he/she is the one who is cursed like Cain was. Hatred and unforgiveness will ruin your entire life.

**Matthew 5:21-26 says,**

*21 “You have heard that it was said to those of old, ‘You shall not murder, and whoever murders will be in danger of the judgment.’*

*22 But I say to you that whoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment. And whoever says to his brother, ‘Raca!’ shall be in danger of the council. But whoever says, ‘You fool!’ shall be in danger of hell fire.*

*23 Therefore if you bring your gift to the altar, and there remember that your brother has something against you,*

*24 leave your gift there before the altar, and go your way. First be reconciled to your brother, and then come and offer your gift.*

*25 Agree with your adversary quickly, while you are on the way with him, lest your adversary deliver you to the judge, the judge hand you over to the officer, and you be thrown into prison.*

*26 Assuredly, I say to you, you will by no means get out of there till you have paid the last penny.”*

***I suppose that there are simply two types of people.***

**1 John 3:10-12 says,**

*10 “In this the children of God and the children of the devil are manifest: Whoever does not practice righteousness is not of God, nor is he who does not love his brother.*

*11 For this is the message that you heard from the beginning, that we should love one another,*

*12 not as Cain who was of the wicked one and murdered his brother. And why did he murder him? Because his works were evil and his brother's righteous.”*

I believe that a person is either a murderer or a martyr. You will be one or the other; a martyr if you depend upon the blood, a murderer if you depend upon anything else!

What is a martyr? Jesus said, when asked by His disciples when He would return, (my paraphrase), “That is not your business, but I am going to give you power through the Holy Spirit to be a martyr [witness]” (Acts 1:7-8). I believe that you are a martyr when you do not give up in the overcoming process, but press on. I believe that you are a martyr when you take up your cross and deny your flesh! I believe that you are a martyr when you won't stop preaching the Gospel no matter what the circumstances are, and even when you are falsely accused and persecuted.

**Religion always kills. A blood covenant person always gives.**

So many believers truly misunderstand God's love and His compassion for hurting people. Many become self-righteous, not on purpose, but by default, just by not staying tuned into God's

Word and His presence and by not confessing their sins of judgment for others. If Jesus' blood covenant for us, on our behalf, made us children of God, people who are righteous with God, then how can we be self-righteous? Should we not rather be grateful for the gift?

When you trust in the blood, like Abel, you take on the character of the blood-giver, in this case God. If you do not trust in the blood, then you take on the character of Satan. It does not matter how much you read the Word or how often you go to church, or how many "do good" activities you are involved in. If you are not participating in the blood covenant relationship on blood covenant terms, you are by default a murderer!

If you are in a blood covenant relationship with God through Jesus, then it will progressively show in your habits of life. You will be desperately looking for a place to give. You will be unselfish. You will be hungry to find the hungry people and feed them. You will be searching for the hurting and poor people to comfort them, especially those who have hurt themselves. You will be helping those who religious people shun, like prostitutes, drug users, widows, orphans, and the down and outers, those who may not be a success in their culture. If you are practicing the blood covenant relationship with Jesus, you will have His character of loving the unlovable. You will fear judging others whose lives do not look like they are lining up with your standards or even God's standards.

**Romans 13:8 says,**

*8 "Owe no one anything except to love one another, for he who loves another has fulfilled the law."*

If you are practicing the blood covenant relationship with Jesus, you will not be concerned about your own financial welfare, you will know that if you give like your blood covenant Partner, Jesus, then He will take care of your finances through sowing and reaping.

**2 Corinthians 9:6 says,**

6 *“But this I say: He who sows sparingly will also reap sparingly, and he who sows bountifully will also reap bountifully.”*

If you are practicing the blood covenant relationship with Jesus, you will consider others better than yourself. Your level of pride will continually be decreasing and your humility will be increasing.

If you are practicing the blood covenant relationship with Jesus, you will be desperately looking for ways to submit to the proper authority.

You are a martyr when you take up your cross to live the love life, even if you do not lose your physical life.

Rejecting the covenant caused Cain to become a murderer. Cain's descendents created a culture of cities, music, businesses, perhaps politics, etc. God had to abandon that entire line and start over with Seth. The line of Seth led to Noah, through whom the righteous seed was carried forward. If Cain would have shed the animal's blood, a type of Christ's blood, and would have “taken up his cross,” then vengeance would have been on Satan and not on himself.

**Jesus did not shed His blood for the covenant only to keep you out of Hell. He wants you to inherit His character and be part of His Body.**

The Lord made it simple. All we have to do is hold up the mirror of His character, walk in love and when we miss it be honest with Him about it and repent.

I don't know about you, but I am amazed that I am one of those who heard God speak and accepted His offer of the blood. I take no credit for it at all! There are billions of people living on this earth right now that totally reject the idea of a blood covenant with Deity. I do not understand their hearts. I suppose it looks too good to be true, or maybe someone has not shown them the real message. What is equally amazing are those “believers” who have in some way accepted the blood covenant sacrifice of Jesus, but who refuse to accept His character into



their lives. How can that be? I think we all have room for improvement!

**The only way we can inherit God’s character is through His Word. We must hear Him speak and obey His authority. We must hear and obey like Abel and not like Cain, even if it “kills” us.**

**John 10:27** says,

*27 “My sheep hear My voice, and I know them, and they follow Me.”*

What is it about Jesus saying that He desires us to hear His voice that is so complicated?

There have been false doctrines on both extremes about hearing God speak. I have heard the side of the “Scripture only” people stating that God has, once for all, spoken, and therefore He will speak no more. Poor people! I have heard the other side say that God speaks to them super-Scripturally, that is in their spirit without Scripture. Dangerous people! I have heard of a village in an Asian country that only had a few pages of Scripture, the part that said, “If thine eye offend thee, cut it out.” They took this literally. I have had a personal experience with a renter in a property we owned who said, “God told me that you were to give me your house.”

I heard Dr. Mark Rutland tell a story (what a story teller!) about meeting a minister on a flight from Los Angeles. This man was from a denomination that did not believe that God was currently speaking to His people, and he urged Dr. Rutland to express his opinion about this as a Pentecostal minister. Dr. Rutland simply asked this man, “Are you called to the ministry?” The man answered, “Yes.” Then he asked, “Who called you?” The man turned his head to the window and did not speak a word for the rest of the flight.

***My testimony.***

In the case of hearing God speak, I do not believe in “balance” but in truth! Back in 1986 I heard a dear old brother in the Lord say that he was no longer a slave to sin. When I heard

this I coveted that experience. He had quoted Romans 6. I read Romans 6 over and over, and indeed it did say so.

**Romans 6:11-12 says,**

11 *“Likewise you also, reckon yourselves to be dead indeed to sin, but alive to God in Christ Jesus our Lord.*

12 *Therefore do not let sin reign in your mortal body, that you should obey it in its lust.”*

**Romans 6:6 says,**

6 *“Knowing this, that our old man was crucified with Him, that the body of sin might be done away with, that we should no longer be slaves of sin.”*

Did I believe, in my mind, that I had been crucified with Christ? Yes! But did I really know it? No. I had not really heard the Lord *speak* this to me. The Lord spoke to me and told me to memorize that chapter and speak it out loud continually. I did. One day it became real to me. The *logos* (general Scripture) of the Word became *rhema* (a personalized Word from the Lord to me), and the resurrected Jesus spoke into my heart those Words. It burned into my soul and ever since then I have never doubted it.

**Revelation knowledge (*rhema*).**

Galatians 4:9 states that not only do we know God, but that we are also known by Him, i.e., He lets us know that He is there. What a wonderful comfort He is able to give us when we are unsure. Hearing Jesus speak directly to my heart has been the primary burning passion in my life. However, I have discovered that it requires gut-level transparency and honesty with myself and with God.

Revelation knowledge comes from the resurrected Jesus through the Holy Spirit speaking according to the Scripture. He lets you know that He is tracking with you and that He knows you. His *rhema* will nullify the words of fear, condemnation, and lack of hope in your life.

Jesus told Peter about this as recorded in the following Scripture.

**Matthew 16:17 says,**

*17 “Jesus answered and said to him, ‘Blessed are you, Simon Bar-Jonah, for flesh and blood has not revealed this to you, but My Father who is in heaven.’”*

The two disciples on the Road to Emmaus received revelation knowledge from the resurrected Christ. However, notice, that first Jesus had to extract from them their inner feelings, their unbelief. He asked them, “What things?” When He did that, He caused them to do like we all must do before receiving revelation knowledge, we must pour out our real feelings to the Lord, then He can work. They expressed their grief and disbelief. Jesus asked them in Luke 24:19, “What things (are you sad about)?” Jesus knew why they were sad, but He needed them to express their feelings.

After that, Jesus preached the Scriptures to them, showing them how He was offered as the Lamb of God for the blood covenant, and how He was now alive and speaking life to them.

**Luke 24:32 says,**

*32 “And they said to one another, ‘Did not our heart burn within us while He talked with us on the road, and while He opened the Scriptures to us?’”*

Hearing God is not reserved for the theologically educated, although there is nothing wrong with that. It is not only for the saint who has “been on the way” for 30 years, although that helps. It is for the meek, humble, pure in heart, and obedient, perhaps even the broken ones. I heard God speak the first day I got saved, in 1979, and I have been hearing Him ever since. He even speaks to me when pride is in the way so that I may continue to hear Him!

**We can neglect the covenant.**

**Hebrews 2:3 says,**

3 “[H]ow shall we escape if we neglect so great a salvation, which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed to us by those who heard Him.”

We have an inheritance through the blood covenant that is so great that sometimes it is difficult to believe. We have grace by inheritance, but we must position ourselves and respond in a covenant manner to receive the inheritance. Satan is trying to block it, but Jesus is our Judge Advocate, the Mediator.

We have expressed seven primary relationship disciplines in our previous chapters. In this chapter we emphasize the issue of honesty, gut-level honesty. If one were to examine gut-level honesty, it would also translate into humility. This kind of humility and honesty will allow you to hear God speak at a greater level.

Both Cain and Abel heard God speak. Both had instructions from their parents about the blood verses vegetable offerings. What was the difference? Why did Cain hear God, but did not "hear" Him? Cain did not obey, yet even in his disobedience God gave him another chance.

**Mark 4:9-12 (Amplified Bible) says,**

9 “And He said, He who has ears to hear, let him be hearing [and let him [a]consider, and comprehend].

10 And as soon as He was alone, those who were around Him, with the Twelve [apostles], began to ask Him about the parables.

11 And He said to them, To you has been entrusted the mystery of the kingdom of God [that is, [b]the secret counsels of God which are hidden from the ungodly]; but for those outside [c]of our circle] everything becomes a parable,

12 In order that they may [indeed] look and look but not see and perceive, and may hear and hear but not grasp and comprehend, lest haply they should turn again, and it [their willful rejection of the truth] should be forgiven them.”

I submit that the difference in the “hearing” between Cain and Abel was pride and humility and embracing the truth and not embracing the truth. Notice that Jesus said that when one willfully rejects the truth, that one will not be able to really hear God's voice.

**James 4:6 says,**

6 *“But He gives more grace. Therefore He says: ‘God resists the proud, but gives grace to the humble.’”*

Jesus’ blood will continually speak to you if you cooperate. Take time to hear God. Then obey Him as Abel did, even if it means becoming a martyr. Is that not better than becoming a murderer?

*Reproduction, resale or internet posting prohibited*

## **Chapter 7**

### **Noah Found Grace.**

#### **How did Noah survive?**

As you read this chapter I would like you to focus not so much on the interesting miracles of the flood during Noah's time, but on the survival of Noah and his family. Jesus challenged us in Matthew chapter 24:37 that our season of living today can be compared to the days of Noah. In Noah's days there was an "end time" disaster that devastated an evil world. As I am editing this chapter in 2010 we are also in a season of "end times."

Noah found grace because he had respect for the blood that covered his sin. However, he found that grace by hearing God speak. I submit that the very fact that he heard God speak, and obeyed, is why he and he alone survived the "end times" of his time. In summary, Noah had an intimate real-time relationship with the Creator God. And just imagine, that was before Christ and the Cross. Just think how much more access you have now to that kind of intimacy!

#### **What is the application of this idea for your life?**

When you have a two-way conversation with God, in which you also include the confessing of your sin, then you have invited God to plant the seed of His Word in your heart. The result is that you will have a transmission of the blood covenant (See John chapter 6:63). The seed that is planted in your heart will provide for your every need. That is how the Kingdom of God operates. Mark 4:11 states that the very mystery of the Kingdom of God is embedded in the Parable of the Sower.

#### ***It does not matter how bad the world has become!***

When you live your life in the mystery of the Kingdom of God, through His Word bearing fruit in your life, it matters not how bad the economy is, how bad the evil morals of this world have become, you will live above the world system and will experience the supernatural grace of God as Noah did!

#### ***What kind of fruit can you expect?***

I submit that the Word of God gives us three major categories of fruit. When you look at the Ark of the Covenant

inside the Tabernacle, it contains three major items, which represent the three types of fruit:

**1. The Law.** This represents your character, as in the Fruit of the Spirit.

**2. Manna.** This represents your daily provisions for your natural life supernaturally provided for you by God.

**3. Aaron's Rod that budded.** This represents your outreach or the fruit you bear by ministering to others.

For a more detailed look at this idea please refer to our book "Grow or Die", Chapter 2 – "The Flowing River."<sup>6</sup>

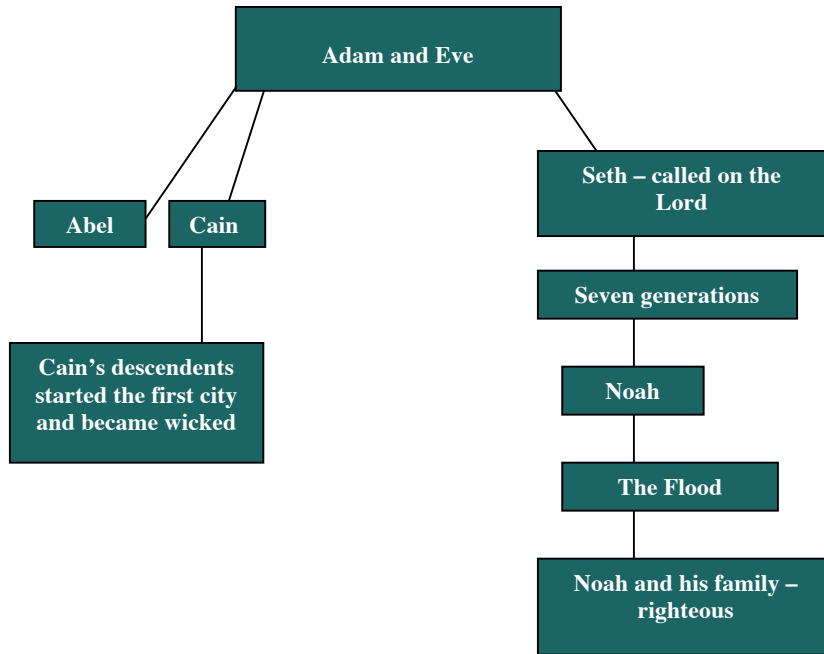
**Approximately 1,500 years passed from Adam to Noah's day.** People lived to be over 900 years old in those days. It is possible that Adam, who lived 960 years, and Noah, who was 600 years old when the flood occurred, were both alive at the same time. The earth was much different then. The earth had a protective layer, the firmament, which kept out the destructive ultra-violet rays from the sun. According to reliable Spirit-filled scientists, the geysers that rose up during the flood process destroyed the firmament.

*Reproduction, resale or internet posting prohibited*

---

<sup>6</sup> Grow or Die book - [http://isob-bible.org/index.php?option=com\\_content&view=article&id=292](http://isob-bible.org/index.php?option=com_content&view=article&id=292)

**Here is history of generations to orient you to the time.**



Some scientists estimate that the population on the earth was 3 billion people at that time. The Bible does not tell us for sure. However, the Bible does tell us that the people who lived on the earth at that time were very evil.

**Genesis 6:5-6 says,**

5 “Then the LORD saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every intent of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.

6 And the LORD was sorry that He had made man on the earth, and He was grieved [deeply hurt and pained] in His heart.”



**Does God have emotions?**

Yes! Look at the above Scripture. God was deeply hurt because He loved man so much. He saw them destroying themselves with immoral living. It would be like a father or mother watching their children hurting him or herself.

The people in Noah's days were very wicked. Most of them did not care anything about God. They just did what they wanted to do. They partied and participated in many other ungodly acts. We can only guess.

Was God unfair to the wicked people? The Bible says that God gave them a long time to change their minds, and that Noah preached to them, but they would not listen (2 Peter 2:5).

**God was going to destroy the entire human race except for Noah and his family!**

**Genesis 6:11-13 says,**

*11 "The earth also was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled with violence.*

*12 So God looked upon the earth, and indeed it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted their way on the earth.*

*13 And God said to Noah, "The end of all flesh has come before Me, for the earth is filled with violence through them; and behold, I will destroy them with the earth."*

**Genesis 6:8-10 says,**

*8 "But Noah found grace in the eyes of the LORD.*

*9 This is the genealogy of Noah. Noah was a just man, perfect in his generations. Noah walked with God.*

*10 And Noah begot three sons: Shem, Ham, and Japheth."*

I have asked the question: "What was it about Noah that caused his family to get into the Ark and believe what he had heard from God?" In Genesis 7:1 God said that Noah was

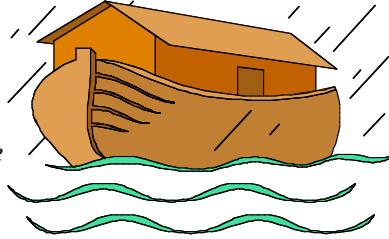
righteous. In God’s eyes that could only mean righteous through the blood covenant, not in his own righteousness.

**Here was God’s plan.**

Noah would build a boat, or an ark. God gave Noah the exact dimensions and sizes for all the details of this ark.

**Genesis 6:14** says,

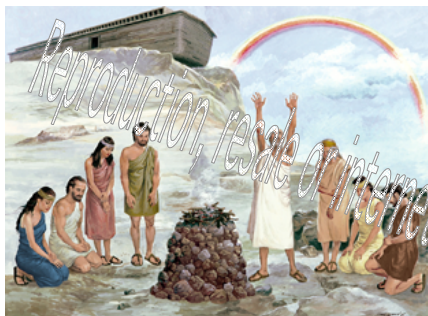
*14 “Make yourself an ark of gopherwood; make rooms in the ark, and cover it inside and outside with pitch.”*



The word *pitch* means in Hebrew “a ransom, satisfaction, bribe, a sum of money, a covering, the price of a life.” Jesus is the *pitch* for our ark.

Scientists have stated that the dimensions of this ark were perfect for survival. Until 1844 the ark was the largest vessel ever built. There was more than enough room in this ark to carry everything that God would tell Noah to carry. The ark was God’s plan to save Noah from the coming judgment. The only reason Noah had this way of escape was that he had found *grace* in the eyes of God.

**Genesis 6:17-19, 22** says,



*17 “And behold, I Myself am bringing floodwaters on the earth, to destroy from under heaven all flesh in which is the breath of life: everything that is on the earth shall die.”*

*18 But I will establish My covenant with you; and you shall go into the ark – you, your sons, your wife, and your sons’ wives with you.*

*19 And of every living thing of all flesh you shall bring two of every sort into the ark, to keep them alive with you; they shall be male and female.”*

*22 “Thus Noah did; according to all that God commanded him, so he did.”*

God told Noah to take his wife, his three sons, and their wives into the ark. He instructed Noah to bring seven of each clean animal, seven of each bird, and two of each unclean animal. Noah would need more clean animals later because he would offer blood sacrifices to the Lord. He told him to take the animals and food for all his family and for the animals. There was more than enough room for this.

**Genesis 7:11-12 says,**

*11 “In the six hundredth year of Noah’s life, in the second month, the seventeenth day of the month, on that day all the fountains of the great deep were broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened.*

*12 And the rain was on the earth forty days and forty nights.”*



**Genesis 7:24 says,**

*24 “And the waters prevailed on the earth one hundred and fifty days.”*

**Genesis 8:3-4 says,**

*3 “And the waters receded continually from the earth. At the end of the hundred and fifty days the waters decreased.”*

*4 Then the ark rested in the seventh month, the seventeenth day of the month, on the mountains of Ararat.”*

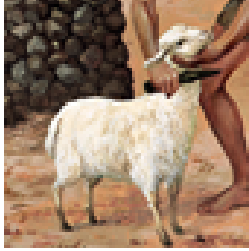
**Genesis 8:16, 18 says,**

16 “Go out of the ark, you and your wife, and your sons and your sons’ wives with you.”

18 “So Noah went out, and his sons and his wife and his sons’ wives with him [after being the in ark one year and ten days].”

**Notice the first thing that Noah did after the flood, he recognized the blood!**

**Genesis 8:20-21 says,**



20 “Then Noah built an altar to the LORD, and took of every clean animal and of every clean bird, and offered burnt offerings on the altar.

21 And the LORD smelled a soothing aroma [a scent of satisfaction to His heart]. Then the LORD said in His heart, ‘I will never again curse the ground for man’s sake, although the imagination of man’s heart is evil from his youth; nor will I again destroy every living thing as I have done.’”

According to this Scripture, Noah was in the habit of offering blood sacrifices, animals, on the Lord’s altar. By doing this, Noah was showing his faith in God’s promise for the *promised blood covenant Lamb*. Remember, Adam, Eve and Abel found grace by the shedding of blood.

**How could Noah have been perfect? How could he have walked with God? How was he considered righteous?**

***How did Noah find grace with God?***

I don’t think that Noah never made mistakes or never sinned. That would be impossible. There must be another reason that God called him perfect.

Grace means that God gave Noah something that Noah did not deserve or work for. Mercy means that we do not receive a punishment that we really deserve to get.

Why did Noah find grace in the eyes of God? Digging into the Scriptures shows us that Noah respected the blood covenant

sacrifices. This made him righteous, which allowed him to hear God speak, and which further allowed him to make the choice to obey God's voice.

**Genesis 6:22 says,**

22 *“Thus Noah did; according to all that God commanded him, so he did.”*

**Genesis 7:1 says,**

1 *“Then the LORD said to Noah, ‘Come into the ark, you and all your household, because I have seen that you are righteous before Me in this generation.’”*

**Genesis 7:5 says,**

5 *“And Noah did according to all that the LORD commanded him.”*

Noah was a man who offered blood sacrifices to the Lord God. Noah understood that it took the blood of an innocent victim, in his case an animal, to restore fellowship with God. The result was, Noah could hear God speak. Noah obeyed God when he heard Him speak.

**Genesis 6:9 says,**

*“..Noah walked with God.”*

**God and man reconnected into intimate friendship by the covenant blood.**

Perfect fellowship between God and man had not been restored yet. That would happen when the *promised blood covenant Lamb* would come. However, the *blood* gave Noah and God a living relationship and they enjoyed each other. Noah must have been so highly synched with God's Spirit and emotions that he realized that he, Noah, needed the blood to have his sin forgiven. Noah must have just sensed his own sin by being so close with God, as he had no other way of knowing how identify his own sin. Also, the fact that Noah knew the exact dimensions for building the Ark was also a confirmation of his intimacy with God.

**The following is a quote from the book The Blood Covenant by H. Clay Trumbull <sup>7</sup>:**

*After the destruction of mankind by the deluge, when God would begin anew, as it were, by the revivifying of the world through the vestige of blood – of life preserving in the ark, he laid new emphasis on the sacredness of blood as the representative of that life which is the essence of God himself. Noah's first act, on coming out from the ark, was to proffer<sup>8</sup> himself and all living flesh in a fresh blood-covenant with the Lord. "Then Noah built an altar to the LORD, and took of every clean animal and of every clean bird, and offered burnt offerings on the altar" (Genesis 8:20).*

*From all that we know of the method of the burnt-offering, either from the Bible-text or from outside sources, it has, from the beginning, included the preliminary offering of the blood – as the life – to Deity, by its outpouring, around, or upon, the altar, with or without the accompaniment of libations of wine; or, again, by its sprinkling upon the altar.*

*It was then, when the spirit of Noah, in this covenant-seeking by blood, was recognized approvingly by the Lord, that the Lord smelled the sweet savor of the proffered offering, - "the savor of satisfaction, or delectation [pleasure]," to him, was in it, and he established a new covenant with Noah, giving commandment anew concerning the never-failing sacredness of blood: "Every moving thing that lives shall be food for you: I have given you all things, even as the green herbs. But you shall not eat flesh with its life, that is, its blood. Surely for your lifeblood I will demand a reckoning, from the hand of every beast I will require it, and from the hand of*

---

<sup>7</sup> Trumbull, H. Clay, *The Blood Covenant*. Kirkwood, MO: Impact Books, 1975, pp. 213-214

<sup>8</sup> Proffered: To offer something for consideration to somebody.

*man. From the hand of every man's brother I will require the life of man. Whoever sheds man's blood, By man his blood shall be shed; For in the image of God He made man" (Genesis 9:3-6).*

*Here, the blood of even those animals whose flesh might be eaten by man is forbidden for food; because it is life itself, and therefore sacred to the Author of life. And the blood of man must not be shed by man, - except where man is made God's minister of justice, - because man is formed in the image of God, and only God has a right to take away – directly or by his minister – the life from one bearing God's image.*

**Noah respected the need for blood.**

He was responding to the blood covenant. Because of his response, God delivered him and his family through impossible circumstances.

*How did he respond? How can we respond in the same way?*

**1. Blood covenant people press in to hear God's voice.** He took the time to hear the voice of God, and most likely coveted hearing Him speak.

**2. Blood covenant people press in to obey God.** Noah was a “doer of the Word.” He obeyed God's voice no matter how he was viewed by others in his culture. In John 14:21-23 Jesus said He would reveal Himself to those who obey His voice and keep His Word.

**3. Blood covenant people press in to consecrate themselves to God.** He was separate from his culture and did not partake in its ways. I don't believe that we can truly consecrate ourselves to God without Him actually doing it. We can cooperate, but I believe that it takes a real “seeing” of Jesus and His loveliness to bring about consecration.

**4. Righteous parents, husbands and wives, put their spouses and children first!** I submit that Noah's wife and children all knew that their husband and daddy was looking out for them first. Sure, Noah preached to the unrighteous masses, but I submit that his ministry did not come before his family.

**5. Blood covenant people know that it is only God's blood that makes them qualified for union and fellowship with God.** They do not hold on to any self-righteousness. They treat others with the same mercy and love that they know they are receiving from God.

**6. Noah preached.** He did not consider it foolish to speak the truth in love. We don't have to preach condemnation to people and bash them over the head with Bible laws. However, we do owe everyone in our realm of influence the truth of the blood covenant inheritance that they are ignoring. We should tell every person that there is a magnificent blood covenant inheritance waiting for them, but also that the "final flood" is coming as well.

What did Noah preach? We are not told the answer to that question, but I submit that he could not have possibly preached what many churches hear every Sunday morning. He knew nothing about self-righteousness or religion. All he knew was that he received grace because of the blood sacrifice.

**2 Peter 2:5 says,**

*5 "[A]nd did not spare the ancient world, but saved Noah, one of eight people, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood on the world of the ungodly."*

My opinion is that Noah did not "preach righteousness" by comparing their filthy lifestyle to his, like so many self-righteous people do. I feel that he knew why he was righteous, that it was the blood of the Lamb that made him righteous; I feel that is what Noah preached! Preaching condemnation and "better than thou" Bible bashing will drive people away from the Lord by the droves! We need more merciful preaching and fewer "church police" who run around the church telling people how bad they are, especially when compared with themselves. I don't think that Noah's family would have entered the Ark had Noah preached anything but grace.

***Our message.***

We need to tell people that God will take their past mistakes, sins and wrong decisions, no matter how bad or how



deep, and give them mercy and grace. He is able to reconcile all the evil in one's life and turn it into a blessing, Colossians 1:20. There is now no condemnation for those who really give their lives to Christ, Romans 8:1-2. The Law of the Spirit of Life in Christ Jesus has overcome the Law of Sin and Death!

**7. Noah did not know when the flood would take place.** He simply worked and preached every day, obeying the smallest details of the architecture of the magnificent craft that God was directing him to build. Can you imagine hearing, in that much detail, to construct one of the most scientifically perfect ships ever built?

**Hebrews 11:7 says,**

*7 "By faith Noah, being divinely warned of things not yet seen, moved with godly fear, prepared an ark for the saving of his household, by which he condemned the world and became heir of the righteousness which is according to faith."*

**8. The only thing Noah had to do was to believe in the blood.** Remember, the word "believe" is an active verb that demands action on the believer's part!

**9. Noah found grace in the blood.** The blood allowed Noah to have a real time living relationship with God.

### **One leg in and one leg out?**

What if Noah or any of his family had one leg in the door of the ark and one leg outside the door when God closed it? Ouch! Christians who try to live dual lives are always "lame." They are miserable. Often God allows them to reach the end of themselves until they get both legs in the "Ark of Christ."

***You really need to "see" Jesus.***

You cannot give away what you have not received. If you have never really "seen" who Jesus really is, then ask Him for that. It may take some major breaking. Are you broken enough that you must depend upon His Word, or do you have another plan? When the Word of God and the blood of God are the last resort you have, when you have run out of self-sufficiency, then you can really see the real Jesus! Jacob was changed and saw

God when he ran out of plans. In my opinion, we can all look forward to seeing more of Him, even in this life, as we run out of plans and our own strength.

**Today is just like the days of Noah!**

A Liberian brother in the Lord who is very dear to my heart, Arthur, called me just as I was going through the final proof reading of this chapter. He said, “Brother Larry, the world is coming apart. It is like the days of Noah.” Just that week, my wife and I were saying the same thing. We saw treacherous weather, multitudes of sexual crimes and murders, and more. Besides all of that, this world’s civilized cultures are being seriously threatened by the most vicious radical Muslim violence and wars that the world has ever seen. If the radical Islam agenda is carried out to its end, the entire world will never be civilized and free again. Even as I am writing this in July 2006, Israel has come under a serious and vicious military attack by radical Islam. There is now a major threat to world peace and to Israel. As real as that threat is, and as probable that terrorists would eventually succeed, I believe that the Lord will intervene in some way to bring His purposes to pass. God’s plan supercedes all future events. His judgment will prevail through and in spite of the evil that mankind is bringing upon this earth.

**God’s coming judgment is for certain, but He will give you supernatural protection, and/or overcoming power.**

One major lesson we can take from Noah is that in spite of what evil comes upon the earth, even into our realm of influence, we can trust God’s grace to provide for our every need! It would seem to the outside observer that nobody could have survived such a flood. However, reading Noah’s story we can have the confidence, that if God saved Noah and his family from the impossible circumstances, that He is also able to save and protect us. We must however meet the same conditions, as Noah did. We must totally consecrate our lives and trust in nothing but the blood and the blood covenant relationship. We all need to get “both legs into the Ark” while there is still time.

People have not changed that much from the days of Noah. People, like in Noah's days, really do not believe that there will be final judgment for them or for the world at large. They live their lives focused on vain things that really have no eternal value.

Peter writes an admonition and warning to all of us in his second epistle.

**2 Peter 3:3-4, 8-10 says,**

*3 “[K]nowing this first: that scoffers will come in the last days, walking according to their own lusts,*

*4 and saying, ‘Where is the promise of His coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of creation.’”*

*8 “But, beloved, do not forget this one thing, that with the Lord one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.*

*9 The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some count slackness, but is longsuffering toward us, not willing that any should perish but that all should come to repentance.*

*10 But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night, in which the heavens will pass away with a great noise, and the elements will melt with fervent heat; both the earth and the works that are in it will be burned up.”*

**Jesus is the grace giver, however, He does warn all of us of the coming judgment as well so we can be spiritually prepared.**

**Matthew 24:37-51 says,**

*37 “But as the days of Noah were, so also will the coming of the Son of Man be.*

*38 For as in the days before the flood, they were eating and drinking [drinking: striving for that which is transitory], marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered the ark,*

39 and did not know until the flood came and took them all away, so also will the coming of the Son of Man be.

40 Then two men will be in the field: one will be taken and the other left.

41 Two women will be grinding at the mill: one will be taken and the other left.

42 Watch therefore, for you do not know what hour your Lord is coming.

43 But know this, that if the master of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched and not allowed his house to be broken into.

44 Therefore you also be ready, for the Son of Man is coming at an hour you do not expect.

45 Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his master made ruler over his household, to give them food in due season?

46 Blessed is that servant whom his master, when he comes, will find so doing.

47 Assuredly, I say to you that he will make him ruler over all his goods.

48 But if that evil servant says in his heart, 'My master is delaying his coming,'

49 and begins to beat his fellow servants, and to eat and drink with the drunkards,

50 the master of that servant will come on a day when he is not looking for him and at an hour that he is not aware of.

51 and will cut him in two, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth."

**This Scripture that compares today to Noah's days also talks about a blessed servant whom we need to emulate in order to secure our safety.**

Here is the description of that servant that the Lord called blessed.

**Matthew 24:45-46 says,**

45 “Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his master made ruler over his household, to give them food in due season?”

46 Blessed is that servant whom his master, when he comes, will find so doing.”

***The servant lived the life of unselfish love.***

***The servant was ready for His Lord to return.***

This not only means that we should be ready for Jesus to return to earth someday, but also for Him to “return” now, during this life, to observe our faithfulness with that which He has entrusted to us.

***The servant was telling others about the coming wrath and judgment in an attempt to save their lives.***

I believe this was some of the “food” mentioned in Matthew 24:45.

***The servant was faithful.***

Being faithful in the small things in life is important to God. God is interested in how we handle the daily affairs in our lives. God never gives us more until we handle the little that we already have with faithfulness. We need to be faithful in practical things, like money, and in spiritual things.

***The servant was a giver.***

He was taking care of others.

***The servant was not treating other people harshly.***

Self-righteous Bible bashing crushes people. Our only hope is to bring others closer to an intimate relationship with Jesus. This means removing guilt and shame, which is the greatest hindrance to a living relationship with Jesus. I do not mean ignoring guilt as so many unbelievers do, but removing it by trusting in the blood and the Word!

***The servant was not living like the unbelievers.***

***The servant was wise.***

Obviously, this is not referring to the wisdom of the world, but to Godly wisdom.

**1 Corinthians 2:6-8 says,**

6 *“However, we speak wisdom among those who are mature, yet not the wisdom of this age, nor of the rulers of this age, who are coming to nothing.*

7 *But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, the hidden wisdom which God ordained before the ages for our glory,*

8 *which none of the rulers of this age knew; for had they known, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.”*

**1 Corinthians 1:23-24 tells us that Christ crucified is wisdom.**

I believe that true wisdom from God is reserved for those who have experienced “a type of death.” It is reserved for those who have lost hope, dreams, family members, position, reputation; the list goes on. It is for those who have made bad decisions in life and are now willing to make Jesus Lord. Wisdom says that the Cross has given you a fresh start; there is now no condemnation (Romans 8:1-2).

Job 28 talks about looking for wisdom. It says that it is not found in the land of the living. It implies that only death has seen it. The Rich Young Ruler in Matthew 19 had too much to trust in. He had all of his worldly wisdom, power and wealth.

When you know for sure that the “world system” and your own efforts offer no hope, then you are a candidate for wisdom. If you fall into this category, lift up your head with hope, because you are a candidate for the supernatural intervention of God!

Are you broken enough that you must depend upon His Word, or do you have another plan? When the Word of God and the blood of God are your last resort, when you have run out of self-sufficiency, then you can see the real Jesus!

When you have experienced God's grace as Noah did and as the servant Jesus described in Matthew 24, then you will have a hunger to get yourself completely into the “Ark of Jesus,” and to live like Noah and like the blessed servant. Then you can have the absolute confidence that God will take care of you no matter how impossible circumstances appear to be.

My wife and I can testify to this. We have faced impossible odds in many facets of life, and God has delivered us every single time!

*Reproduction, resale or internet posting prohibited*

## Chapter 8 Abram Received Grace

Abram came from the line of genealogy of Adam and Eve's third son Seth, and from Noah's favorite son Shem.

**Genesis 9:26** says,

26 "And he said: 'Blessed be the LORD, the God of Shem, and may Canaan be his servant.'"

**The following is a quote from Malcolm Smith.**

<sup>9</sup> After the Flood and the giving of the Noachic Covenant, the true faith was kept alive by a remnant of people. Literature outside the Bible names Shem, who lived to a great age, as the one who kept the faith alive.

Outside of the remnant, the race degenerated rapidly. It appears that the degeneration was led by Ham and his descendants. Nimrod was an immediate descendant from Ham. He was the author of the Tower of Babel, which would mature into pagan religions and cults of Babylon.

**The following is a quote from Watchman Nee.**

<sup>10</sup> Abraham was called and chosen not just for himself but for his descendents; not merely to receive grace, but to transmit grace to others. There had been men of faith before him, men like Abel, Enoch and Noah, who had nobly stood out as different from their contemporaries; but to judge from the record, they almost seem to have done so from birth. Abraham, was in his beginnings, an idolator just like those around him. By himself, until God called him, he could not be ranked alongside Abel, Enoch or Noah. Yet Matthew's Gospel opens with his name.

---

<sup>9</sup> Smith, Malcolm, *The Blood Covenant*, 1990, Malcolm Smith Ministries, San Antonio, TX.

<sup>10</sup> Nee, Watchman, *A Table in the Wilderness*, August 20, Christian Literature Crusade, Ft. Washington, PA; 1965.



*Of all Old Testament names, his occurs most on the lips of Jesus. And this idolator was the man chosen to bring blessings to countless multitudes, chosen for no other reason than that God was pleased to choose him. There was nothing inherent in his character to suggest that through him such blessing should come to so many. God took him, led him, and multiplied him. Cannot the same God do the same for you?*

**Abram heard God's voice.**

**Genesis 12:1-6 says,**

*1 "Now the LORD had said to Abram: 'Get out of your country, from your family and from your father's house, to a land that I will show you.*

*2 I will make you a great nation; I will bless you and make your name great; and you shall be a blessing.*

*3 I will bless those who bless you, and I will curse him who curses you; and in you all the families of the earth shall be blessed.'*

*4 So Abram departed as the LORD had spoken to him, and Lot went with him. And Abram was seventy-five years old when he departed from Haran.*

*5 Then Abram took Sarai his wife and Lot his brother's son, and all their possessions that they had gathered, and the people whom they had acquired in Haran, and they departed to go to the land of Canaan. So they come to the land of Canaan.*

*6 Abram passed through the land to the place of Shechem, as far as the terebinth tree of Moreh. And the Canaanites were then in the land."*

God asked Abram to leave everything he trusted in. He made him a promise of becoming the father of a great nation. Nation, in this sense, I believe refers not only to a race of people, but also a land. God has not forsaken the promise of inheriting a great nation. The physical land of Israel is still promised to Abraham's natural seed (through Isaac and Jacob), and the

spiritual promise land is promised to Abraham's spiritual seed through Christ.

***Abram obeyed the voice of God.***

Notice, this was really an act of great faith. How did Abram know for sure that this was God's voice?

***Abram "saw" God.***

Abram had experienced something even greater than having heard from God; he saw God. God appeared to him. Perhaps that was the result of obedience to the voice of God. John 14:21-23 contains the message that when we obey God that He makes Himself real to us.

**Genesis 12:7 says,**

*7 "Then the LORD appeared to Abram and said, 'To your descendants I will give this land.' And there he built an altar to the LORD, who had appeared to him."*

That word "appeared" is very strong. It infers seeing the real and true identity of a person or thing.

***The following is a quote from Watchman Nee.***

*The man who sees that glory knows he must respond. He cannot do otherwise. Abraham responded, and through all the setbacks and discouragements of his pilgrimage, the vision of God's glory carried him in triumph. Stephen set out first of all to remind his hearers of this.*

*They heard Stephen's testimony, and rejected it, only to become suddenly aware that he himself was beholding that of which he spoke! Full of the Holy Ghost, he looked up steadfastly "and saw the glory of God."*

*He who appeared to Abraham, and he whom Stephen saw were one and the same. There is no change in Him. And that same God, his splendor still undimmed, now carried Stephen through his own*

*terrible crisis. What matters an extra stone of two to the one who beholds the glory of God?*<sup>11</sup>

**Abram’s response to hearing and seeing God was to shed blood.**

That should always be our response. In our case that means to “take up our cross.” When I say, “take up our cross,” I mean that we need to willingly give up our flesh nature, repent for the sins we are allowing that old nature to do, and allow God to replace our old nature with His likeness in us. Compare that to Jesus taking up His cross. He willingly gave up His divine nature by taking on our nature through the blood covenant, and allowed His own crucifixion in order to make the exchange with us.

Notice, Abram built an altar. The word “altar” used here means a bloody sacrifice. According to Strong’s Bible Concordance, the word means, “will remove, release, to be removed, to depart, to set free, deliver.”

I asked the question: “Lord, why would Abram have performed a blood covenant sacrifice on an altar? It does not say that You asked him to do that.” I submit that the Lord showed Himself to Abraham for Who He really is.

**John 8:56 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*56 “Your forefather Abraham was extremely happy at the hope and prospect of seeing My day (My incarnation); and he did see it and was delighted.”*

*It is interesting that God give each person an opportunity to “see” Him.*

**Titus 2:11 says,**

*11 “For the grace of God that brings salvation has appeared to all men.”*

When one sees the grace of God’s blood covenant, as did some of these First Testament<sup>12</sup> characters we have been

---

<sup>11</sup> Nee, Watchman, *A Table in the Wilderness*. Fort Washington, PA: Christian Literature Crusade, 1978.

studying, the natural response is to shed blood, perhaps even taking up your own cross. Now we can see even better; they just saw from afar off.

While I believe that God revealed Himself to Abram little by little, as we will see through Genesis chapters 15-22, I submit that Abram saw enough of God in this appearance to know that He was a blood covenant God, unlike the idols he had been worshipping. I submit that he saw this loving God in the blood covenant taking his curse and giving him, Abram, God's blessing. Abram saw a giving God, not a hard taskmaster. He saw a God who would die to bless him. That is why Abram would cut blood at the altar; that is why he would follow him anywhere.

With this appearance, Abram obeyed a very difficult command, which was to leave his family. That was not like today's families. *Family* back then was like a huge corporation. It represented financial and spiritual security. They believed in ancestral worship. Forsaking that, they thought, would put them under a curse. The family was like a multi-national corporation with its wealth and influence. Leaving that would require a great vision of something or Someone far better. Also, recall that Abram was at his wits end being childless, and this wonderful blood-shedding God promised him a seed, an offspring. Therefore, Abram did have some natural reason to be open to God seeing that he was at his wits end because he was childless.

God told him that He would be the One to bless him, and that the blessing would be too much for him to contain. Abram would have to pour it out on others. God also promised that He would be Abram's protector and that He would make his name or family a great nation. The following Scripture talks about Abram and others.

**Hebrews 11:13 (Amplified Bible) says,**

13 "These people all died controlled and

---

<sup>12</sup> The term *First Testament* is used in lieu of *Old Testament* as a matter of courtesy to those precious Jewish friends of ours who may be reading this. To many of them, their Testament is not *old*, but it is the *first*.

*sustained by their faith, but not having received the tangible fulfillment of [God's] promises, only having seen it and greeted it from a great distance by faith, and all the while acknowledging and confessing that they were strangers and temporary residents and exiles upon the earth."*

I feel that Abram saw Jesus revealed, the Lamb of God, and he had no other response than to shed blood and give himself to God unreservedly as a consecrated offering. See Luke 24. When two disciples saw Him as the Lamb of God, revealed to them by Jesus Himself by going through Moses and the Prophets, their hearts burned. God met them at their wits end.

Abram was not perfect, but he set his priorities correct. His obedience was "straightaway." Straightaway is a word used often in the KJV Bible and means immediate, forthwith. It is the word *eutheos* in Greek.

**Abraham made an important decision that we all need to make.**

**Genesis 12:8 says,**

*8 "And he moved from there to the mountain east of Bethel, and he pitched his tent with Bethel on the west and Ai on the east; there he built an altar to the LORD and called on the name of the LORD."*

Bethel is the House of God, and Ai was the place of the Canaanites, "heap of ruins." Commentators have said that Abram's tent door was facing Bethel and his back was to Ai. He turned his back to the world and his face towards God. I submit that Abram was motivated to turn his back on the world system because he "saw" God. I can testify that happened to me!

**How did God teach Abram his first practical grace lesson?**

All of us, like Abram, have valuable raw character material that needs to be purified. In that perspective God needs to deal with our self-sufficiency, or some call it our "flesh." Sometimes it is difficult for us to discern between the works of the flesh and the

wind and grace of God, but God has a way of defining that for us. It is called “breaking.” I call it “ordained failure.”

Abram entered his training period, his preparation for his destiny and purpose. Do not despise your “mountains,” your disappointments, challenges or failures. God wants to bring His purposes to you by His power, His grace, and He needs to get your self-sufficiency out of the way. Often He cannot do that by doctrine, but by experience.

Notice, in the following passage of Scripture that Abram left his promise land when the famine came and went to Egypt, a type and shadow of the “world system.” Abram used his craftiness to escape the famine. Wouldn’t you?

God wants our secret “mountains” revealed, as well as our performance based “flesh,” so that we can bear fruit through His grace and not our works. Also, notice that he hit a circumstance in lying about Sarai that could have spelled disaster. However, God’s grace kicked in to give Pharaoh the plague and the understanding of it. This saved Abram, and also thrust him from Egypt with all of his riches in tact. Not only were Abram’s original riches in tact, but he and Lot acquired much more wealth through Pharaoh’s gifts to them. That is amazing grace!

**Genesis 12:9-20 says,**

*9 “So Abram journeyed, going on still toward the South.*

*10 Now there was a famine in the land, and Abram went down to Egypt to dwell there, for the famine was severe in the land.*

*11 And it came to pass, when he was close to entering Egypt, that he said to Sarai his wife, “Indeed I know that you are a woman of beautiful countenance.*

*12 Therefore it will happen, when the Egyptians see you, that they will say, ‘This is his wife’; and they will kill me, but they will let you live.*

*13 Please say you are my sister, that it may be well with me for your sake, and that I may live because of you.”*

*14 So it was, when Abram came into Egypt, that the Egyptians saw the woman, that she was very beautiful.*

*15 The princes of Pharaoh also saw her and commended her to Pharaoh. And the woman was taken to Pharaoh's house.*

*16 He treated Abram well for her sake. He had sheep, oxen, male donkeys, male and female servants, female donkeys, and camels.*

*17 But the LORD plagued Pharaoh and his house with great plagues because of Sarai, Abram's wife.*

*18 And Pharaoh called Abram and said, "What is this you have done to me? Why did you not tell me that she was your wife?"*

*19 Why did you say, 'She is my sister'? I might have taken her as my wife. Now therefore, here is your wife; take her and go your way."*

*20 So Pharaoh commanded his men concerning him; and they sent him away, with his wife and all that he had."*

**Just imagine yourself in this story. What a rescue by God! Grace, grace!**

Why is God so determined to have us reach the end of our self-sufficiency? Because the flesh is under a curse and Jesus died to take that curse and give us the blessing. Abram saw the blood, but he needed the discipline of the Holy Spirit to help him reach his wits end, to reveal his "mountain," so that God could bring His grace to bear.

As we learned in the previous chapter from Noah, grace and faith came into his life before his works were fulfilled. Our works should be the *result* of grace and faith, *not* a way to grace and faith. We should see the fruit appearing and tend the fruit, doing that which only man can do, as faith without works is dead. But the fruit is still initiated and produced by God. Later we will discover how Abram learned this painful lesson again with Ishmael.

**The powerful, strong-willed apostle Paul learned about grace the hard way also.**

The Apostle Paul grasped this truth. Paul expressed this time and time again. I would just like to use two Scripture passages to demonstrate how he felt. When the messenger of Satan afflicted him, it probably had to do with his list in 2 Corinthians chapter 11. That list included, being flogged with thirty-nine lashings five times, shipwrecked and spending the night in the sea, being robbed, facing perils by the heathen, perils in the city, in the wildernesses, in the sea and among false brethren, being hungry, cold and naked, and then having the cares of the new churches that had many problems and attacks. In addition, history records that these false brethren were legalistic Jews who always attacked Paul's message of grace. His response to all this was recorded in the following Scripture.

**2 Corinthians 12:8-10 says,**

*8 "Concerning this thing I pleaded with the Lord three times that it might depart from me.*

*9 And He said to me, 'My grace is sufficient for you, for My strength is made perfect in weakness.' Therefore most gladly I will rather boast in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me.*

*10 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in needs, in persecutions, in distresses, for Christ's sake. For when I am weak, then I am strong."*

Notice he said, "I take pleasure." He did not say he just endured them, but rather they were profitable for him. Also notice that God did not deny Paul's request to deal with these thorns, but rather informed him that he simply needed to allow the grace working in and through him, God's power, to overcome them.

Here is what excites me. Obviously Paul was reaping what he had sown in his life. He had persecuted the church along with the legalists, and even was a party to murder, probably more than once. I do know that God's mercy can keep us from reaping from certain bad seeds we have sown. However, often we have to



reap some of the evil consequences of what we have sown much like the apostle Paul. The exciting thing to me is that God will use such things to bring about a huge anointing like he did for Paul, which is why I believe Paul said he took pleasure in these painful challenges. Here is the Scripture to back this up:

**Colossians 1:20** says,

*“20 and by Him to reconcile all things to Himself, by Him, whether things on earth or things in heaven, having made peace through the blood of His cross.”*

**Grace is something that we best learn by experience.**

I don't think that Paul learned this lesson overnight. I believe that God had to take him through much breaking. Perhaps the Lord revealed this concept to Paul during his wits end.

**Zechariah 4:6-7** says,

*“6 So he answered and said to me: ‘This is the word of the LORD to Zerubbabel: ‘Not by might nor by power, but by My Spirit,’ Says the LORD of hosts.*

*7 Who are you, O great mountain? Before Zerubbabel you shall become a plain! And he shall bring forth the capstone with shouts of ‘Grace, grace to it!’”*

“Mountains” often mean entrenched strongholds of demonic powers that rule the world's system, and often its people.

**Grace misunderstood!**

I believe that the reason some people do not behave in a godly way is that they do not know who they are; their identity is lost and they are mourning for the real “me.” I do admit, however, that there are various types of heart responses to God's mercy and grace. There are those who would tend to presume on God's grace as a way to live in their old nature. Guess what? They will remain in bondage because it is impossible to receive God's grace with a proud or selfish heart and without the exchange of the blood covenant. There are those who feel that they do not need God's grace because they are strong performers. Guess

what? They will remain in bondage for the same reason. God will not allow His grace to be misused, only misunderstood.

But if you, with an honest, humble heart, bring your “mountains” to God in humility and repentance, He will not only speak grace to your mountain, but also you will become most intimate with Him, and you will come to appreciate His blood covenant and who it has made you to be. Lifestyle and godly behavior will simply be a result of who you know yourself to be. God wants to make contact with you, to let you know what His blood has done, so that He may see you understand your true identity and become very close to Him. We need to treat others with grace and not disgrace so that they too can come to know the Creator personally through His blood.

**Romans 2:4** says,

*4 “Or do you despise the riches of His goodness, forbearance, and longsuffering, not knowing that the goodness of God leads you to repentance?”*

Grace is found when you experience your first salvation experience, but I know from experience and from Scripture that it is continually found as we walk out our life. Sometimes one does not realize that it is needed, until it is needed.

Paul made this clear to the Galatian church, which had backslidden into performance and legalism.

**Galatians 3:1-3** says,

*1 “O foolish Galatians! Who has bewitched you that you should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ was clearly portrayed among you as crucified?”*

*2 This only I want to learn from you: Did you receive the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?*

*3 Are you so foolish? Having begun in the Spirit, are you now being made perfect by the flesh?”*

**Abram came back to the blood after he had learned some lessons in Egypt.**

Abram chose the place of the Lord rather than the place of worldly prosperity. He allowed Lot to choose the green fertile plain towards Sodom, and he accepted the barren desert trusting in God to provide for his flocks. Notice how this shows the absolute sovereignty of God. Lot chose the “best” land but Abram went to Canaan, which turned out to be the land God promised to Abram and his descendents, Genesis 13:14-18. However, God’s sovereignty is only enjoyed by those who turn their backs on their idols and trust God with all of their heart.

**Genesis 13:1-12 says,**

*1 “Then Abram went up from Egypt, he and his wife and all that he had, and Lot with him, to the South.*

*2 Abram was very rich in livestock, in silver, and in gold.*

*3 And he went on his journey from the South as far as Bethel, to the place where his tent had been at the beginning, between Bethel and Ai,*

*4 to the place of the altar which he had made there at first. And there Abram called on the name of the LORD.*

*5 Lot also, who went with Abram, had flocks and herds and tents.*

*6 Now the land was not able to support them, that they might dwell together, for their possessions were so great that they could not dwell together.*

*7 And there was strife between the herdsmen of Abram’s livestock and the herdsmen of Lot’s livestock. The Canaanites and the Perizzites then dwelt in the land.*

*8 So Abram said to Lot, ‘Please let there be no strife between you and me, and between my herdsmen and your herdsmen; for we are brethren.*

*9 Is not the whole land before you? Please separate from me. If you take the left, then I will go to the right; or, if you go to the right, then I will go to the left.’*

*10 And Lot lifted his eyes and saw all the plain of Jordan, that it was well watered everywhere (before the LORD destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah) like the garden of the LORD, like the land of Egypt as you go toward Zoar.*

*11 Then Lot chose for himself all the plain of Jordan, and Lot journeyed east. And they separated from each other.*

*12 Abram dwelt in the land of Canaan, and Lot dwelt in the cities of the plain and pitched his tent even as far as Sodom.”*

**After Abram was separated from Lot [the ways of the “world”] he saw more of God and God’s promises.**

**Genesis 13:13-18 says,**

*13 “But the men of Sodom were exceedingly wicked and sinful against the LORD.*

*14 And the LORD said to Abram, after Lot had separated from him: ‘Lift your eyes now and look from the place where you are – northward, southward, eastward, and westward;*

*15 for all the land which you see I give to you and your descendants forever.*

*16 And I will make your descendants as the dust of the earth; so that if a man could number the dust of the earth, then your descendants also could be numbered.’*

*17 Arise, walk in the land through its length and its width, for I give it to you.’*

*18 Then Abram moved his tent, and went and dwelt by the terebinth trees of Mamre, which are in Hebron, and built an altar there to the LORD.”*

I have heard Dr. Mark Rutland express the thought that once you see the depth of the depravity of the “sea” or the lost world and its systems, you will have one of two reactions. Either you will sink in despair or you will give your life to rescue the lost, sometimes called “missions.”

**God called Abram back to the “world,” but this time it was to rescue his nephew Lot.**

**Genesis 14:14 says,**

*14 “Now when Abram heard that his brother was taken captive, he armed his three hundred and eighteen trained servants who were born in his own house, and went in pursuit as far as Dan.”*

God is not a respecter of persons, He will do the same in your life as He did for Abram, if you choose His ways and forsake the ways of the “world.”

**What about Abraham’s faith?**

Ephesians 2:8 indicates that grace is the product of faith.

**Ephesians 2:8 says,**

*8 “For by grace you have been saved through faith, and that not of yourselves; it is the gift of God.”*

We know that Romans 10:17 says that faith is the product of hearing God speak. Jesus indicated that He wanted us to live our lives (that our lives would be sustained) by every Word that proceeds from the mouth of God, Luke 4:4<sup>13</sup>. Hebrews 10:38<sup>14</sup> says that we, as righteous people, should sustain our very lives by faith. Sustain means to supply every single need, to provide the nourishment required just to keep something alive. God’s Word, as in creation, creates those things He wants that are not yet in existence. He desires to use you as a co-creator with Him. ***Faith can be so watered down and misunderstood. I believe that the greatest lesson we can learn from Abraham about faith is found in Romans chapter 4.***

**Romans 4:16-22 says,**

---

<sup>13</sup> Luke 4:4: “But Jesus answered him, saying, “It is written, ‘Man shall not live [sustain his life] by bread alone, but by every word of God.’””

<sup>14</sup> Hebrews 10:38: “Now the just shall live [sustain his life] by faith; But if *anyone* draws back, My soul has no pleasure in him.”

16 *“Therefore it is of faith that it might be according to grace, so that the promise might be sure to all the seed, not only to those who are of the law, but also to those who are of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of us all*

17 *(as it is written, ‘I have made you a father of many nations’) in the presence of Him whom he believed – **God, who gives life to the dead and calls those things which do not exist as though they did;***

18 *who, contrary to hope, in hope believed, so that he became the father of many nations, according to what was spoken, “So shall your descendants be.”*

19 *And not being weak in faith, he did not consider his own body, already dead (since he was about a hundred years old), and the deadness of Sarah’s womb.*

20 *He did not waver at the promise of God through unbelief, but was strengthened in faith, giving glory to God,*

21 *and being fully convinced that what He had promised He was also able to perform.*

22 *And therefore ‘it was accounted to him for righteousness.’”*

***Notice, Abraham had many opportunities to not believe what God said to him. However, believing God’s Word is what allowed God to perform His purposes, not only in Abraham’s life, but also for the world.***

He was beyond child producing age, Sarah had a “dead” womb, the promise that his seed would be as the stars was too big of a promise to stand for, and there were many other circumstances and thoughts that battled Abraham’s faith. However, he must have taken his thoughts captive and hoped against all hopelessness. He did not *consider* the circumstances, but instead put the Word that God had spoken to him in first position. To *consider* means, “to consider attentively, fix one’s eyes or mind upon.” He fixed his eyes on God’s promise, knowing that God was able to perform that which He spoke.

When God speaks to you, not only does faith rise, but also His seed is planted in your heart. That seed, like agricultural seeds, has in it the power and intelligence to produce what it was intended for.

I want to raise an alert for all of us to use caution in doctrines sometimes followed by branches of Christianity. There are branches of the church world that seek signs and wonders and a personal word of prophecy, *primarily*. Make no mistake, I love signs and wonders, and I have been used in personal prophecies, and have received personal prophecies that have been from the Lord. However, it can be dangerous to your relationship with God to depend and rely upon others to speak to you on behalf of God. It can be dangerous to always seek signs and wonders as your way of believing.

About three months after I first got saved in 1979, I met a man who told me about a church service he had just been in. He told me that the visiting evangelist had a personal word of prophecy for almost everybody in the congregation, except for him. He was devastated. In my uneducated naivety, I asked him, “Would it not be better for God to speak to you personally?” He looked at me and said no more.

Abraham waited a long time, for many years, but he stood on what God had spoken to Him. He understood how God operates when He speaks. God “calls those things which do not exist as though they did.” When we hear God tell us something that we need for our lives, or that He needs for His Kingdom, that does not presently exist, if we hang on to the Word it will ultimately manifest in our lives. If we do not seek that process, we will remain in bondage.

Satan will indeed come to steal the Word when God speaks to you. Or, he will convince you that you do not need to seek God’s voice, either way, Satan has his way.

**Isaiah Chapter 55 (Amplified Bible) gives us a beautiful poetic picture of the benefits of hearing God speak. Of course, as we have stated, obedience to God’s Word is always required of you as you hear Him speak.**

**Isaiah 55:1-2 (Amplified Bible) says,**

1 *“WAIT and listen, everyone who is thirsty! Come to the waters; and he who has no money, come, buy and eat! Yes, come, buy [priceless, spiritual] wine and milk without money and without price [simply for the self-surrender that accepts the blessing].*

2 *Why do you spend your money for that which is not bread, and your earnings for what does not satisfy? Hearken diligently to Me, and eat what is good, and let your soul delight itself in fatness [the profuseness of spiritual joy].”*

***Here the spiritual wine is joy, and the bread is our provision. That includes everything that we need. The word milk, carries with it the meaning of abundant life. Notice, the price we pay is self-surrender.***

Next, God tells us the source of this wonderful provision, spiritual wine and milk. It is hearing His Word.

**Isaiah 55:3 (Amplified Bible) says,**

3 *“Incline your ear [submit and consent to the divine will] and come to Me; hear, and your soul will revive; and I will make an everlasting covenant or league with you, even the sure mercy (kindness, goodwill, and compassion) promised to David.”*

**Next, God shows us how His Word works, and why we can always depend on it.**

**Isaiah 55:8-11 (Amplified Bible) says,**

8 *“For My thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways My ways, says the Lord.*

9 *For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are My ways higher than your ways and My thoughts than your thoughts.*

10 *For as the rain and snow come down from the heavens, and return not there again, but water the earth and make it bring forth and sprout, that it may give seed to the sower and bread to the eater,*



*11 So shall My word be that goes forth out of My mouth: it shall not return to Me void [without producing any effect, useless], but it shall accomplish that which I please and purpose, and it shall prosper in the thing for which I sent it.”*

When rain falls on my garden, I can go out the next day and the ground may be dry. It has evaporated and gone back to heaven. However, it accomplished its task of causing fruit to grow before it left to go back to heaven. In the same way, when we hear God speak, we are to speak His Words back to Him in heaven, and then we can be assured that His fruit will prevail in our lives, provided, of course, that we keep out the satanic weeds.

*Reproduction, resale or internet posting prohibited*

## Chapter 9

### Grace: How is It Related to the Blood Covenant?

There are many heresies in church life today. Some people deny even the most essential beliefs of Christian faith – the virgin birth, the deity of Jesus, and so on. Others, not quite as dangerous, deny the present power of the Holy Spirit in the life of believers, stating that it was a one-time event that happened only in and for the First Century Church. Others follow and teach a perverted definition of grace.

We have to make sure that we have not attempted to re-define God's character for our own selves. It is vital to our temporal and eternal well-being that we have an accurate understanding of this subject of grace for ourselves, and for how we treat others.

The only obligation we have towards others is love. One of the ways we are called upon to express God's love is to offer every person in our realm of influence the true Gospel, the real Good News. That Good News is simply the grace of the blood covenant.

#### **We all have a deep need for real grace.**

Most people do not think that they need grace until they sense the desperate need for it. I have heard reports from Christians and even pastors who have walked with the Lord for over 25 years, that they finally understood what grace really means.

Our need for grace is both for the new birth, and for moving on to maturity. "Saved" and "salvation" are words that mean *to be made whole, healed and delivered from danger*. They are in the progressive tense that indicates an ongoing process, not just a one-time new birth experience.

Some people have perverted the definition of God's grace as a one-time event for the New Birth. Paul harshly corrects this idea in Galatians chapter 3. He discovered for himself that grace is needed to go on to maturity, even for our entire lives. He tells the Galatians that they have been bewitched. This indicates that a spiritual force has deceived them into believing that they were saved by grace but now must be made perfect by the law, or by performance of their old nature, their flesh.

Philippians 2:12-13 tells us that we are to work out our own salvation, meaning the ongoing wholeness of our souls. This includes the renewing of our minds, wills and emotions with fear and trembling. The Greek words in this passage, as defined in the Amplified Bible, emphasize that we are not to rely on our own strength for this but on God's power, His grace.

**Grace perverted.**

Some have perverted the definition of grace as God excusing sin. God does not excuse sin, but rather He forgives it. *Forgive* means *to cut it away*. As God cuts sin away it goes into the exchange mechanism of the blood covenant. Your sin with its curse goes to God. His blessing comes to you by His dwelling inside of you. That is grace. Grace is God replacing you with Him in you. That is the Good News.

***Grace is Jesus, through the Holy Spirit, replacing you with Himself, or living His life through you.***

It is an exchange, not just an excuse. We need grace to be born again, but we need grace everyday so that Jesus can replace us in our lives. That only happens when we repent and allow the Word to speak to us and heal us.

***Grace is not an excuse.***

Grace is not an excuse to keep sinning. It is not to excuse a worldly lifestyle, your old flesh nature, your addictions and self-sufficiency. These things keep you in bondage and Jesus' mission is to set you free. People who attempt this are grieving the very mission and heart of God.

***Here are some Scriptures that confirm this.***

**Romans 6:1-2 says,**

1 "What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin that grace may abound?"

2 "Certainly not! How shall we who died to sin live any longer in it?"

**Romans 6:14-16 says,**

14 "For sin shall not have dominion over you, for you are not under law but under grace."

*15 What then? Shall we sin because we are not under law but under grace? Certainly not!*

*16 Do you not know that to whom you present yourselves slaves to obey, you are that one's slaves whom you obey, whether of sin leading to death, or of obedience leading to righteousness?"*

**Hebrews 10:29** says,

*29 "Of how much worse punishment, do you suppose, will he be thought worthy who has trampled the Son of God underfoot, counted the blood of the covenant by which he was sanctified a common thing, and insulted the Spirit of grace?"*

**Jude 1:3-4** says,

*3 "Beloved, while I was very diligent to write to you concerning our common salvation, I found it necessary to write to you exhorting you to contend earnestly for the faith which was once for all delivered to the saints.*

*4 For certain men have crept in unnoticed, who long ago were marked out for this condemnation, ungodly men, who turn the grace of our God into lewdness and deny the only Lord God and our Lord Jesus Christ."*

**We enter into grace through the doorway of humility.**

God has a protection for His grace so that it cannot be truly perverted. There is a doorway through which this process happens. It is a protective entryway through which one must pass in order to obtain this blessing. That doorway is humility. James 4:6, 1 Peter 5:5 and Proverbs 3:34 all indicate that God gives grace to the humble, but resists the proud.

Jesus is our model for humility. Humility is defined in Philippians 2:5-9. It says that Jesus, in His humility, took up His cross for the blood covenant and died for us on it. He laid down His own deity.

Our humility, therefore, is to take up our cross. We cannot obtain the benefits of grace outside of the blood covenant, i.e., His cross combined with our cross. Our cross is defined in Luke 9:24 and following, when Jesus stated that we cannot follow Him without taking up our cross daily. Then He defined that act in the denying of our self-sufficient soul power. He used the word *deny* that means ‘to say no to,’ and the word *psuche* for life which means ‘soul.’ Humility is denying your self-sufficiency and relying on God, through His Word and the Holy Spirit, for every issue in life! Pride, the opposite of humility, is relying on your own self-sufficiency, and/or relying on your own view of yourself. That view may be well below the identity that God has for you. A low self-esteem is not humility, but it is pride!

Grace through the blood covenant is awesome and often seems too good to be true, but we need to remember that grace is a covenant benefit. It cannot be obtained any other way. God may issue grace to us first so that we may respond, but without our blood covenant response we cannot hang on to the blessing, nor can we move on to maturity and into the image of Jesus.

**Grace travels on the wings of faith.**

Ephesians 2:8-9 says that we are saved (which means *to be healed, made whole and delivered from danger* on an ongoing basis) by grace, and that grace works through faith. We know that faith comes by hearing the Word of God. The Scripture then says that all of this grace that works by faith through the Word, is a gift of God not of works, lest any man should boast.

Finally, the question: Faith in what? Faith in the finished work of Christ, the completed blood covenant through which we become partakers of the Divine life in every area of our lives, for eternity!

Grace is realized when we see the failure of our “old life” in trying to live for God, and when we admit that failure with repentance. Then the Life of God lives through us. That is the Gospel; God living in us (Galatians 2:20). Amazing Grace, how sweet the sound!

***However, Satan always challenges our faith and our rightful inheritance of God’s finished work.***

**Ephesians 6:11-18 says,**

*11 “Put on the whole armor of God, that you may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil.*

*12 For we do not wrestle against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this age, against spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places.*

*13 Therefore take up the whole armor of God, that you may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand.*

*14 Stand therefore, having girded your waist with truth, having put on the breastplate of righteousness,*

*15 and having shod your feet with the preparation of the gospel of peace;*

*16 above all, taking the shield of faith with which you will be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked one.*

*17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God;*

*18 praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, being watchful to this end with all perseverance and supplication for all the saints.”*

***Satan will attempt to disguise himself as non-existent.***

Circumstances will align themselves against you to cause you to doubt God’s grace, God’s faithfulness, God’s Word, His power, compassion and His promises. You will need to use all the armor listed in Ephesians chapter 6, including speaking the Word out loud to resist the devil with the Sword of the Spirit.

**The apostle Paul, in Romans 6, 7, and 8, shows one of my favorite examples of grace.**

In Romans chapter 6, Paul tells about the wonderful finished work of Jesus at the Cross. He tells us about our inheritance and how we have been buried with Christ and have been resurrected with Him. Then, in Romans chapter 7 he exposes his own

weakness by stating that he tries to live up to this truth expressed in chapter 6, but he is unable to, no matter how hard he tries.

***Then, in Romans chapter 8 Paul defines grace as the answer to his dilemma.***

**Romans 8:1-2 says,**

*1 “There is therefore now no condemnation [final judgment] to those who are in Christ Jesus, who do not walk according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit.*

*2 For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has made me free from the law of sin and death.”*

***The Law of sin and death is defined in the Book of James.***

**James 1:14-15 says,**

*14 “But each one is tempted when he is drawn away by his own desires and enticed.*

*15 Then, when desire has conceived, it gives birth to sin; and sin, when it is full-grown, brings forth death.”*

Perhaps the sin penalty that is coming at us is not from our own doing, but from a generational curse coming from our forefathers.

It is all about sowing and reaping. We know, Biblically and naturally, that when one sows good seed, one reaps good fruit, and vice versa, when one sows bad seed, one bears bad fruit.

Paul, according to Romans 7, was or had been sowing bad seed, and he cried out for deliverance when he said the following.

**Romans 7:24-25 says,**

*24 “O wretched man that I am! Who will deliver me from this body of death?*

*25 I thank God – through Jesus Christ our Lord! So then, with the mind I myself serve the law of God, but with the flesh the law of sin.”*

The “body of death” referred to the death sentence, the condemnation for a murderer in those days. The one guilty of

murder would have a dead corpse strapped to his/her back, until the affect of that corpse would finally eat away and kill the victim. This was a slow and terrifying death. Death was inevitable, and was slow and painful. In the same way, Paul knew that when he had sown bad seed, he was under the death sentence of reaping bad fruit, or death in his life.

However, the grace to this death sentence is found in Romans 8:1-2. Paul said that the Law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus overcomes the Law of sin and death, or annuls it. In other words, a higher law has given him grace and pardon from death. As an example, the law of gravity keeps an airplane on the ground. However, as that plane applies power and taxis down the runway, the law of lift causes it to fly, thus overcoming the law of gravity.

### **The law versus grace.**

This is where so many believers and non-believers become confused. Our old carnal nature and the ways of the world are all based upon law therefore many feel when they begin to follow Jesus that they must live by the law. This subject can take up an entire chapter therefore I will briefly summarize it.

The law depicts the character of God. Only God Himself could keep the law, and indeed, Jesus is the only man that kept the entire law. He is God incarnate. Therefore the purpose of the law for us is to show us our sin, or to show us how we miss the mark of God's character and perfect holiness for our lives. When we see this example of perfection, in the law, we are to become convicted of sin, Romans 3:19-20. With that conviction we are to confess our shortcomings to the Lord, and with that confession comes grace. The law leads us to grace, which is Jesus, who kept the law, living His life through us!

### **The Old Testament prophets peeked into this magnificent move of God in the future.**

Peter, in his first epistle, starts out by encouraging his readers about the trial and challenges of their faith that they are experiencing. He says, in 1 Peter 1:8-9, below, that the product of their enduring their challenges and trials, and even sufferings,



would be the salvation of their souls. The salvation of our souls, I submit, is when, by grace, our wills, minds and emotions are transformed into the image of Christ. It is by grace, or in other words, by Christ through the Holy Spirit replacing us with Him in us.

The prophets of the past could only wonder about such a phenomenon. Even the angels, it says, are eagerly watching. I can only imagine the Old Testament saints saying, “Could this be true? Could it be, that in the future, the believers in God will actually be filled with the Holy Spirit?” And even the angels are watching in awe. What a wonder gift you have. I urge you to not take it for granted, but to thank God every day for His grace, His filling us with Himself!

**1 Peter 1:6-12 (New Living Version) says,**

6 *“So be truly glad. There is wonderful joy ahead, even though you have to endure many trials for a little while.*

7 *These trials will show that your faith is genuine. It is being tested as fire tests and purifies gold—though your faith is far more precious than mere gold. So when your faith remains strong through many trials, it will bring you much praise and glory and honor on the day when Jesus Christ is revealed to the whole world.*

8 *You love him even though you have never seen him. Though you do not see him now, you trust him; and you rejoice with a glorious, inexpressible joy.*

9 *The reward for trusting him will be the salvation of your souls.*

10 *This salvation was something even the prophets wanted to know more about when they prophesied about this gracious salvation prepared for you.*

11 *They wondered what time or situation the Spirit of Christ within them was talking about when he told them in advance about Christ’s suffering and his great glory afterward.*

*12 They were told that their messages were not for themselves, but for you. And now this Good News has been announced to you by those who preached in the power of the Holy Spirit sent from heaven. It is all so wonderful that even the angels are eagerly watching these things happen.”*

**Following are more of the purposes of grace in our lives.**

***The New Birth.***

**1 Peter 1:18-19 says,**

*18 “[K]nowing that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, like silver or gold, from your aimless conduct received by tradition from your fathers,*

*19 but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot.”*

***The Throne of Grace. Turning afflictions, curses and sufferings into blessings.***

Refer to Hebrews 4:16, Revelation 1:4, and Revelation chapters 4-5. See also Paul’s deliverance through grace in 2 Corinthians 12:8-10.

At the Throne of Grace, described in Revelation chapters 4 and 5, we see the curse, the Scroll, but we see the Lamb taking the curse for us. We see our inheritance change from vengeance, which becomes Satan’s inheritance, to blessings, which was Christ’s inheritance.

**Revelation 5:9 says,**

*9 “And they sang a new song, saying: ‘You are worthy to take the scroll, and to open its seals; for You were slain, and have redeemed us to God by Your blood out of every tribe and tongue and people and nation.’”*

**Hebrews 4:16 says,**

16 *“Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.”*

**Revelation 1:4 says,**

4 *“John, to the seven churches which are in Asia: Grace to you and peace from Him who is and who was and who is to come, and from the seven Spirits who are before His throne.”*

***Forgiveness, or removal of sin.*** *Forgive* means to remove, to cut away, not to excuse (1 John 1:9).

***Removal of self-sufficiency, pride, legalism and the performance oriented personality.*** Read Galatians chapters 1-3. These people knew that they had received the new birth by grace, but they were convinced now they had to live by legalism and performance. Paul called this a “different Gospel,” and proclaimed a curse on those who propagated it. See Paul’s deliverance through grace in 2 Corinthians 12:8-10.

***Continual deliverance, healing, and overcoming.***

**Ephesians 2:8-9 says,**

8 *“For by grace you have been saved [healed made whole, delivered from danger on an ongoing basis] through faith, and that not of yourselves; it is the gift of God,*

9 *not of works, lest anyone should boast.”*

***Future judgment and/or reward.***

**1 Peter 1:13 says:**

13 *“Therefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and rest your hope fully upon the grace that is to be brought to you at the revelation of Jesus Christ.”*

***For any kind of outreach or ministry. Even Jesus needed it.***

**Luke 2:40 says,**

40 “*And the Child grew and became strong in spirit, filled with wisdom; and the grace of God was upon Him.*”

***For financial security.***

**2 Corinthians 9:8 (Amplified Bible) says,**

8 “*And God is able to make all grace (every favor and earthly blessing) come to you in abundance, so that you may always and under all circumstances and whatever the need be self-sufficient [possessing enough to require no aid or support and furnished in abundance for every good work and charitable donation].*”

***Grace for God to move whatever “mountains” [demonic powers] you confront.***

**Zechariah 4:6-7 (Amplified Bible) says,**

6 “*Then he said to me, This [addition of the bowl to the candlestick, causing it to yield a ceaseless supply of oil from the olive trees] is the word of the Lord to Zerubbabel, saying, Not by might, nor by power, but by My Spirit [of Whom the oil is a symbol], says the Lord of hosts.*

7 *For who are you, O great mountain [of human obstacles]? Before Zerubbabel [who with Joshua had led the return of the exiles from Babylon and was undertaking the rebuilding of the temple, before him] you shall become a plain [a mere molehill]! And he shall bring forth the finishing gable stone [of the new temple] with loud shoutings of the people, crying, Grace, grace to it!”*

***For the wholeness or salvation of your soul, your mind, will, and emotions.***

**Philippians 2:12-13 (Amplified Bible) says,**

12 “*Therefore, my dear ones, as you have always obeyed [my suggestions], so now, not only [with the enthusiasm you would show] in my presence but*

*much more because I am absent, work out (cultivate, carry out to the goal, and fully complete) your own salvation with reverence and awe and trembling (self-distrust, with serious caution, tenderness of conscience, watchfulness against temptation, timidly shrinking from whatever might offend God and discredit the name of Christ).*

*13 [Not in your own strength] for it is God Who is all the while effectually at work in you [energizing and creating in you the power and desire], both to will and to work for His good pleasure and satisfaction and delight.”*

**Now the most important one: to know God intimately. 2 Peter 1:2 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*2 “May grace (God’s favor) and peace (which is perfect well-being, all necessary good, all spiritual prosperity, and freedom from fears and agitating passions and moral conflicts) be multiplied to you in [the full, personal, precise, and correct] knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord.”*

If you know all about God, but do not *know* Him, life is a waste.

**Grace is not possible without the Blood of the Covenant.**

Grace does not describe a whimsical God just deciding in each case that He will excuse our conduct and overlook it, or deciding to grant power to one who may need it. No, grace is only possible by Jesus changing places with us and taking our curse for His blessing, taking our weakness for His strength and taking the very penalty of our sin and sickness for His righteousness and health. Every time you receive grace, Jesus receives from you just the opposite.

**The most important fact about God’s grace.**

I challenge you to simply meditate upon and remember this definition of grace. Grace is simply God living His life inside of you, replacing your old nature with His nature.

**We will never really enjoy God and His grace unless we realize that it is not all our comfort.**

If grace, as I have presented, is Christ living His life in and through you, then you should expect to experience not only His character, but also His death and resurrection. The selfish or the narcissistic mindset does not understand that while God wants to bless us that His blessings most often come through our own “death and resurrection.” When we understand this we can then trust and praise Him through all things. Then, we will see that overcoming our challenges in life has also set others free. Look at Paul’s attitude in the Scripture below.

**Philippians 3:10-11 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*10 “[For my determined purpose is] that I may know Him [that I may progressively become more deeply and intimately acquainted with Him, perceiving and recognizing and understanding the wonders of His Person more strongly and more clearly], and that I may in that same way come to know the power outflowing from His resurrection [which it exerts over believers], and that I may so share His sufferings as to be continually transformed [in spirit into His likeness even] to His death, [in the hope]*

*11 That if possible I may attain to the [spiritual and moral] resurrection [that lifts me] out from among the dead [even while in the body].”*

**Now take a minute and do a little exercise on grace.**

Look at the emphasis on grace that so many Epistles end with. Look up these Scriptures. I was amazed! These are the closing thoughts for all of these Epistles.

Romans 16:24, 1 Corinthians 16:23, 2 Corinthians 13:14, Galatians 6:18, Ephesians 6:24, Philippians 4:23, Colossians 4:18, 1 Thessalonians 5:28, 2 Thessalonians 3:18, 1 Timothy

6:21, 2 Timothy 4:22, Titus 3:15, Philemon 25, Hebrews 13:25, 1 Peter 5:12, 2 Peter 3:18, and the closing verse of the Bible, Revelation 22:21.

*Reproduction, resale or internet posting prohibited*

## Chapter 10

### The Bloody Trench!



“AFTER THESE things, the word of the Lord came to Abram in a vision, saying, Fear not, Abram, I am your Shield, your abundant compensation, and your reward shall be exceedingly great” (Genesis 15:1,

Amplified Bible).<sup>15</sup>

One may wonder why God may have begun this conversation with the words: “Do not be afraid.” Abram had just refused a great material reward from the King of Sodom, and had just confirmed the blood covenant by a ceremony with Melchizedek. God says “fear not” many times in Scripture. He knows that we have many opportunities to doubt, and that doubt can bring fear. Abram refused the earthly king’s reward, but was promised a reward from the King of Kings.

This is a wonderful lesson about the character of God for our lives. When we forsake and cease to depend upon our worldly strengths (the strength of our flesh, our old unregenerated nature, our inherent dishonesty, human manipulation) and rely entirely on God, through His Word which represents the blood covenant, then God says to us like He said the Abram, “Fear not, I am your Shield, your abundant compensation, and your reward shall be exceedingly great.” In other words, “You have depended upon the exchange in the blood and not on the King of Sodom, therefore, I am free to really bless you. I AM your King!”

In Genesis chapter 14, there was the passing of the blood covenant elements between Melchizedek and Abram and then

---

<sup>15</sup> The reference in this Scriptures is to the Lord as Abram's King.



Abram tithed to Melchizedek. I believe that the tithe that Abram paid to Melchizedek was more significant than many of us, including myself, can imagine. From the standpoint of the recipient, the tithe is to enable him to bless others. From the standpoint of the giver, the tithe cleanses the rest of what he/she owns and receives from the corruption of the world and Satan.

I can only guess what prompted Abram to pay tithes. Perhaps Melchizedek instructed him. Perhaps this was something that Abram intuitively knew, or maybe it was a custom in his idol worship.

However, I can surmise this much that Abram was so completely taken aback with the radical implications of this blood covenant with deity that he would have given or done anything. As it ends up, he did just that in Genesis chapter 22.

Abram had some questions about God's promise to bless him and reminded God about his most serious infirmity, being without child.

**Genesis 15:2-6 says,**

*2 "But Abram said, 'Lord GOD, what will You give me, seeing I go childless, and the heir of my house is Eliezer of Damascus?'*

*3 Then Abram said, 'Look, You have given me no offspring; indeed one born in my house is my heir!'*

*4 And behold, the word of the LORD came to him, saying, 'This one shall not be your heir, but one who will come from your own body shall be your heir.'*

*5 Then He brought him outside and said, 'Look now toward heaven, and count the stars if you are able to number them.' And He said to him, 'So shall your descendants be.'*

*6 And he believed in the LORD, and He accounted it to him for righteousness.'*

**The apostle Paul used this over and over as his main doctrinal reference for our righteousness, especially in Romans chapter 4.**

**Romans 4:16 says,**

16 *“Therefore it is of faith that it might be according to grace, so that the promise might be sure to all the seed, not only to those who are of the law, but also to those who are of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of us all.”*

Believing in the finished work of the Cross is what made us righteous, keeps us righteous and what, by grace, transforms our lives to the righteous holiness of God. In Galatians chapter 3, Paul warned his people to not count on their works for continuing their righteousness and to move on with their maturity in Jesus.

**Abram was not afraid to ask questions.**

**Genesis 15:7-11** says,

7 *“Then He said to him, ‘I am the LORD, who brought you out of Ur of the Chaldeans, to give you this land to inherit it.’*

8 *And he said, ‘Lord GOD, how shall I know that I will inherit it?’*

9 *So He said to him, ‘Bring Me a three-year-old heifer, a three-year-old female goat, a three-year-old ram, a turtledove, and a young pigeon.’*

10 *Then he brought all these to Him and cut them in two, down the middle, and placed each piece opposite the other; but he did not cut the birds in two.*

11 *And when the vultures came down on the carcasses, Abram drove them away.”*

**The blood covenant ditch was prepared.**

The animal carcasses were cut in halves and set on each side of the ditch to bleed into it. Blood would flow into the ditch and both covenant parties would wade through the blood.

The Lord did not directly answer his question, but went directly to demonstrate His answer through the blood covenant. It should be the same with us. Often we want God to do this thing or that thing, and we need to go back to see what He has already done through the blood covenant. To see what is already

ours, we need to pray Ephesians 1:16-20, that the eyes of our hearts may see revelation knowledge, the very personal ‘rhema’ of God speaking to us. The three parts of this Ephesians Scripture that God suggests that He wants us to see are:

- 1. His purpose for our calling and for our lives.**
- 2. His inheritance to equip us for living out that calling.**
- 3. His power to bring about both of the above; the power of the resurrection!**

**Ephesians 1:16-20 says,**

*16 “do not cease to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers:*

*17 that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give to you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him,*

*18 the eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that you may know what is the hope of His calling, what are the riches of the glory of His inheritance in the saints,*

*19 and what is the exceeding greatness of His power toward us who believe, according to the working of His mighty power*

*20 which He worked in Christ when He raised Him from the dead and seated Him at His right hand in the heavenly places.”*

**I believe that God wanted Abram to see the finished work of the Cross, just as He wants us to see and believe.**

When we see the finished work, then we can concentrate on our calling. We are called to abide in the Vine as described in John chapter 15, or in other words, to be in strong real-time communion and fellowship with Jesus. John 15 goes on to say that when we keep that relationship right, then fruit happens in our lives. First, fruit for our character. Then, fruit for our provisions, and finally fruit to extend the Kingdom. We are not to be task-oriented, but rather we need to be relationship-oriented. We turn things upside down so many times and concentrate on doing this or that for God, and often we forsake

the relationships that are so important in our lives, including the main one, with God Himself.

When your relationships are right, God’s fruit will animate your tasks! I cannot help but to comment here: the primary issue for relationships with others and with God is truth! Too many people try to maintain relationships without honesty; it will not work! Also, God will not tolerate it! His name is Truth! You will be unable to really *see* God and receive His revelation knowledge without *absolute truth!*

**God speaks in the dark, in the ditch.**

**Genesis 15:12-17 says,**

12 *“Now when the sun was going down, a deep sleep fell upon Abram; and behold, horror and great darkness fell upon him.*

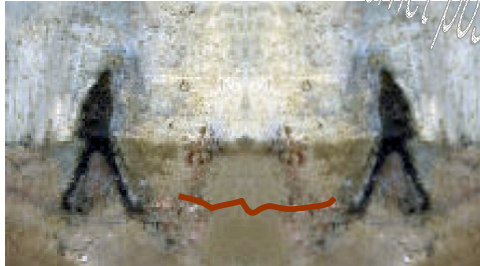
13 *Then He said to Abram: ‘Know certainly that your descendants will be strangers in a land that is not theirs, and will serve them, and they will afflict them four hundred years.*

14 *And also the nation whom they serve I will judge; afterward they shall come out with great possessions.*

15 *Now as for you, you shall go to your fathers in peace; you shall be buried at a good old age.*

16 *But in the fourth generation they shall return here, for the iniquity of the Amorites is not yet complete.’*

17 *And it came to pass, when the sun went down and it was dark, that behold, there appeared a smoking oven and a burning torch that passed between those*



**The following is what most likely happened in those days in the blood covenant ditch. Each party would walk**

the ditch towards the other, each proclaiming the blessings if the covenant conditions were kept and the curses if the conditions were not kept. As they reached each other they would often even press an open wound to the other's open wound, often in their wrists. They would exchange coats, weapons and pledges. Sometimes they would exchange rings and signets. They would exchange weaknesses and strengths and they would become more closely related than their "milk" brothers. Nothing held back, nothing!

**What's the blood all about?**

The two people walking the ditch of blood are exchanging who they are with one another. That means that they both had to die to who they were before they entered the ditch of blood. They exchanged natures, identities and even names.

Jesus died to who He was, the Creator. How much will you hold back of who you were? How much of your flesh do you wish to hold on to? To the same degree that you hold on to your old identity, to that degree you fail to receive the nature of the one with whom you cut covenant; in this case, Jesus!

**Why did God put Abram to sleep?**

If Abram had walked through this blood covenant ditch to exchange his curses for God's blessings, it would not have worked. Why? It was because Abram was unable to keep his end of the bargain. He would have failed in the promise, or at least his children would have failed, and for sure, you and I, as his spiritual children have failed.

***How did God deal with this? How did God, in His mercy and passion to bless Abram and you and me, pull this off?***

I submit that the two persons who walked the blood covenant ditch were the Holy Spirit, representing the Father, and Jesus, representing Abram and you and me! Notice, the two people were a "smoking oven and a burning torch." Abram saw this entire ceremony while in a deep sleep; he had little to do with it.

Upon looking up the Hebrew implications of the words "smoking oven" and "burning torch" they seems to indicate the

fire of God's wrath. We know that God's entire wrath was put upon Jesus at the Cross in order to allow God to offer us His blessing. That is what happened in a pre-figure (a shadow of the future work of Jesus) in that bloody trench.

I don't think that it is a stretch to say that God appeared unto Abram as recorded in Genesis chapters 12-15 as the incarnated Jesus, the crucified and resurrected One. Many Scriptures tell us that God never changes.

**James 1:17 says,**

*17 "Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and comes down from the Father of lights, with whom there is no variation or shadow of turning."*

*We also know that Jesus was crucified before the foundation of the world* (Revelation 13:8). In John 8:56 Jesus said that Abraham saw His incarnation.

Paraphrasing the unsaid message it may be like this: "Okay son, I want to bless you with children so that I may have my purpose done on this earth, which is to purchase mankind back from Satan. It is going to take the life of My Son to accomplish this because He is the only perfect One with whom I can make covenant. If you were to walk this ditch, you would fail, you would be without child and My Messiah could not come to redeem you and your descendents. But if My Son, Jesus, were to walk this ditch on your behalf, then when you and your descendents do indeed fail, My Son will die on their behalf." Now that is Good News!

***How could God die on behalf of Abraham's descendents?***

God would have to become God incarnate!

**John 1:1-4, 14 says,**

*1 "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.*

*2 He was in the beginning with God.*

*3 All things were made through Him, and without Him nothing was made that was made.*

*4 In Him was life, and the life was the light of men."*

14 “*And the Word became flesh and dwelt among us, and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth.*”

**Abram’s main activities for this blood covenant ceremony were:**

1. Obeying God to cut and prepare the animals. Absolute obedience to God’s authority, nothing held back or questioned. This is a must if one is to receive God's blessings.
2. To keep the vultures away from the covenant promise (spiritual warfare). After that he fell asleep.
3. To believe the unbelievable, the promise. To believe that God was offering to exchange His very life, the life of His Son, for Abram’s life of being childless. Romans chapter 4 states that Abraham believed beyond human hope, believed that God, who calls those things that are not as though they were, could perform what He promised. Also, in the exchange was the promise that Abram’s descendants would receive the Holy Spirit, the very personhood of God in their spirit.

**God speaks His covenant purposes and promises.**

**Genesis 15:18-21 says,**

18 “*On the same day the LORD made a covenant with Abram, saying: ‘To your descendants I have given this land, from the river of Egypt to the great river the River Euphrates –*

*19 the Kenites, the Kenezites, the Kadmonites,*

*20 the Hittites, the Perizzites, the Rephaim,*

*21 the Amorites, the Canaanites, the Girgashites, and the Jebusites.’”*

**What was the significance of this blood covenant ceremony?**

What did Abram see? What was its real meaning?

Walking the blood trench. The Man (Jesus) in the ditch was Abraham’s seed but He was also Deity. What must have Abraham thought? In the blood covenant exchange Abram received forgiveness, i.e., the cutting away of his very sin nature,

his very character, his very personhood. This extends far beyond merely the removal of sin, as we often characterize it. For instance, we can be very grateful that when we fail in our lives, when we perform in a way that is not like the character of God, that God forgives us, or removes that particular transgression. However, deeper forgiveness is experienced in the fact that not only our “sins” are forgiven, but also our “sin nature” is removed, that being our very old carnal flesh nature. It is removed, or “forgiven,” going into Jesus and we receive His nature in exchange.

**When we receive revelation on this, then we experience our true identity.**

When we experience our true identity, then our lives will line up, little by little, with God’s holiness. When this occurs, then we can resist the devil and accomplish spiritual warfare for our families, the world and ourselves. We need all three: Sit, Walk, and Stand. Ephesians 2:6, 4:1, and 6:11.

***Experiencing our new identity has far reaching effects.***

Our sin is no longer ours, it is His. Our cancer and other infirmities are no longer ours, they are His. Our failures are no longer ours, they are His.

***What was the real, the true bottom line, promise to Abram?***

Galatians 3:13-14 says that God promised the Holy Spirit to Abraham’s descendents. What does this mean? I submit that the Holy Spirit is the very person of God and God promised that He Himself, through the Holy Spirit, would be Abraham’s inheritance via this blood covenant. The other side of this coin is that God’s inheritance would be the very spirit of Abram and Abram’s descendents, which is a spirit separated from God. This is what happened to Jesus on the Cross. He was separated from God the Father and the Holy Spirit so that you and I could inherit the very personhood of God Himself.

**Galatians 3:14 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*14 “To the end that through [their receiving] Christ Jesus, the blessing [promised] to Abraham might come upon the Gentiles, so that we through*



*faith might [all] receive [the realization of] the promise of the [Holy] Spirit.”*

The true promise to Abram, and to you and me, was the Holy Spirit. To put it in other terms, it was to receive the very nature and character and personhood of God into the human race, at least to Abram’s descendents (those who believe and have the faith of Abram).

**This is the Great Exchange of Identity!**

This is the very bottom line of the blood covenant exchange, His Spirit for our spirit. It was not even a restoration of what Adam had lost, for Adam had forsaken the Spirit of God prior to the resurrection of Jesus. Now we receive the Holy Spirit after the resurrection, and the very personhood of the resurrected Jesus, over Whom death and Satan has no more dominion or power! Praise His name forever!

Our inheritance is not simply the blessings that come from God (healing, removal of shame and guilt, removal of the curses that came with our old nature). Our inheritance is far beyond, no matter how exhaustive one makes the list of blessings. Our inheritance is Christ Himself, through the Holy Spirit.

To Moses He said, “I AM.” To Abram He said, “I AM in the ditch with you right now. I am swearing to receive your curse and give you My resurrected blessing.” To you and me He is saying the same thing! “I AM in the ditch with you, receiving your infirmity, your curse and giving you My blessing.”

***God cannot lie, nor does He change.***

**Hebrews 6:17 says:**

*17 “Thus God, determining to show more abundantly to the heirs of promise the immutability of His counsel, confirmed it by an oath.”*

You may ask: “If this is so complete, if this blood covenant is so inclusive, if it was to Abraham’s seed, and if his seed is Christ and if I have Christ, then why is this not working for me?”

I am glad you asked. You may be thinking that this whole thing is too good to be true, or perhaps you think that you are not

worthy enough to experience this great exchange. Maybe you have heard about this and you think it is for others, or maybe you have heard this and think that it is too radical and that those who expound it are just faith freaks. Maybe you have never heard of it. It is called the Gospel, the Good News!

**Listen!**

1. The blood covenant on your behalf is complete, there is nothing left out, there is nothing that has yet to be accomplished.

2. Notice, however, that even with the promise to Abram in Genesis chapter 15, that God told him that there would be a time of apparent failure. He told him that the Hebrew nation would go into Egyptian bondage for 400 years and then would come out.

3. God works His works on the basis of death and resurrection. One cannot receive the blessing of resurrection without the pain of death.

4. In the experience of “death” during your walk with Jesus you will also notice that you have an antagonist, an enemy to your inheritance: Satan and his team of fallen angels and demons. Abram was called to chase away the vultures from the blood covenant ceremony, that being a type of our standing against the devils that are attempting to block our inheritance.

5. You must experientially inherit the blood covenant through the Word of God planted in your heart as in Mark chapter 4. John 6:63 confirms this idea. Also notice that in Mark chapter 4, in the parable about the Word of God, Jesus emphasizes that seeds do not grow overnight. He stated in Mark 4:23-24 that we have the responsibility of hearing and taking responsibility for what we hear: i.e., obeying what we hear and keeping it as a seed in our heart. Notice in Mark 4:26-32 that Jesus warns that the seed starts out very small, and then takes time to grow into the fruit intended.

6. Jesus warned in Mark 4:14-20 that Satan would use all his resources to steal the seed of the Word. Going through the process of spiritual warfare and of continual death and resurrection is called “overcoming.” This is our calling here on earth.

While on the Isle of Patmos, John spoke one common theme to each post-resurrection church as recorded in the Book of Revelation. He ended each of his letters with an exhortation that they become overcomers. It is God calling to all of us saying, “Will anybody sign up for this Overcoming Ministry I have? It pays well, good fringe benefits, life insurance, a promise for eternity, but in the meantime you may not be too comfortable. You see, I have gained the victory over your enemies, as I promised Abraham, but now you, My Body, must exercise that victory over the circumstances and enemies in your realm of influence. But fear not!”

A major part of our spiritual warfare responsibility lies in the proclamation of God’s Word to the spiritual enemy.

***The Good News is radical!***

It is a complete exchange of your personhood for the Holy Spirit, or His personhood. It is the Great Identity Exchange! However, not all people experience the radical exchange. Some don’t believe, some are lazy, and others give up while Satan is stealing the seed of the Word that Jesus plants into their hearts.

*Reproduction, resale or internet posting prohibited*

## Chapter 11

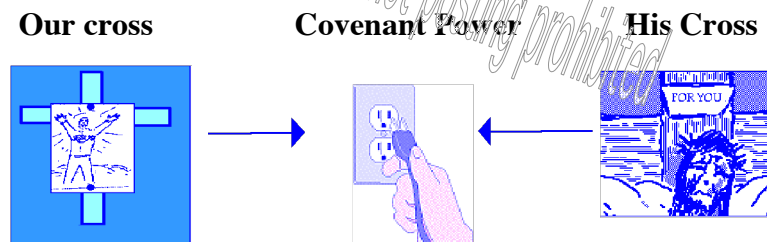
### Abram's Response to the Covenant

What I enjoy most about this chapter is that we can invite God's supernatural power to work for and through us by responding properly to the blood covenant. We will see that in the lives of Abraham and Moses in this chapter.

God did not create us as robots. He respects our personal choice and our independent volition. He never forces Himself on anybody. It has been said that the Holy Spirit is manifested as a dove to show us that He can be easily chased away if we do not welcome Him.

In Genesis chapter 15, Abram was called to play a very small part in the blood covenant. He was put to sleep while the two forms of Deity walked through the blood covenant ditch. However, in chapter 17, Abram is called upon to take a very active part in the covenant. It is interesting that this takes place after Abram's episode in Genesis chapter 16, birthing Ishmael with Sarai's maidservant Hagar. God uses this story to warn us about the dangers of the works of our flesh and thinking that we are helping God with His promises by acting presumptuously. We can so easily create "Ishmaels" thinking that we are helping with God's work. To avoid this, we need to learn about God's fruit program. (See our book "Grow or Die"<sup>16</sup>).

God's covenant takes two parties even though He has done the great work. There is still a work that we must perform and that is exercising our free choice to receive Him, to believe Him, to obey Him and to allow Him to do His sanctifying work in us. These responses that we will be discussing in this chapter bring the power of His cross, His grace and His fruit into our realm of influence.



<sup>16</sup> <http://www.isob-bible.org/openlessons.htm>

**In Genesis chapter 17:1-14, God is refreshing His promises to Abram.**

**Genesis 17:1-8 says,**

1 *“When Abram was ninety-nine years old, the LORD appeared to Abram and said to him, ‘I am Almighty God; walk before Me and be blameless.*

2 *And I will make My covenant between Me and you, and will multiply you exceedingly.’*

3 *Then Abram fell on his face, and God talked with him, saying:*

4 *‘As for Me, behold, My covenant is with you, and you shall be a father of many nations.*

5 *No longer shall your name be called Abram, but your name shall be Abraham; for I have made you a father of many nations.*

6 *I will make you exceedingly fruitful; and I will make nations of you, and kings shall come from you.*

7 *And I will establish My covenant between Me and you and your descendants after you in their generations, for an everlasting covenant, to be God to you and your descendants after you.*

8 *Also I give to you and your descendants after you the land in which you are a stranger, all the land of Canaan, as an everlasting possession; and I will be their God.’”*

**Now God asks Abraham to keep his end of the covenant.**

**Genesis 17:9-14 says,**

9 *“And God said to Abraham: ‘As for you, you shall keep My covenant you and your descendants after you throughout their generations.*

10 *This is My covenant which you shall keep, between Me and you and your descendants after you: Every male child among you shall be circumcised;*

11 *and you shall be circumcised in the flesh of your foreskins, and it shall be a sign of the covenant between Me and you.*

*12 He who is eight days old among you shall be circumcised, every male child in your generations, he who is born in your house or bought with money from any foreigner who is not your descendant.*

*13 He who is born in your house and he who is bought with your money must be circumcised, and My covenant shall be in your flesh for an everlasting covenant.*

*14 And the uncircumcised male child, who is not circumcised in the flesh of his foreskin, that person shall be cut off from his people; he has broken My covenant.’”*

**How does this apply to our lives?**

Abraham was blessed in order to be a blessing. God did not bless him, nor does He bless us with the New Birth in order to have us return to our old nature, our old lifestyle, our old idols, and our self-seeking and selfish ways. He blessed us to be a blessing to others. He gave us His character, His Spirit, so that we could do His work on this earth. However, He does not demand that from us. He gives us free choice.

I cannot explain why some people seem to stop short with God and not allow Him to work everything He wants to do with and in us. I do know that we always have choices and that my personal choices have always been out of love for Him. Sure I am thankful daily for what He *did* for me, but I am more motivated by Who He *is*! Romans chapter 2 states that the love of God leads us to repentance. God prefers to draw us with His love rather than guilt and condemnation. Yet some people do not respond.

**One great example is in the Book of Hosea.**

God tarried with Israel, who was depicted as a prostitute in that setting. Yet He woos her with His love. At the end of Hosea, God uses the following prophecy for Israel and for you and me.

**Hosea 14:4-8 says,**

*4 “I will heal their backsliding, I will love them freely, for My anger has turned away from him.*

*5 I will be like the dew to Israel; He shall grow like the lily, and lengthen his roots like Lebanon.*

*6 His branches shall spread; His beauty shall be like an olive tree, and his fragrance like Lebanon.*

*7 Those who dwell under his shadow shall return; they shall be revived like grain, and grow like a vine. Their scent shall be like the wine of Lebanon.*

*8 Ephraim shall say, ‘What have I to do anymore with idols?’ I have heard and observed him. I am like a green cypress tree; Your fruit is found in Me.”*

**God was saying, “Once they see Me, they will turn from their idols.”** The First Testament points to the true circumcision, which is heart circumcision. The New Testament confirms it. This is how this subject applies to us.

**Deuteronomy 30:6 says,**

*6 “And the LORD your God will circumcise your heart and the heart of your descendants, to love the LORD your God with all your heart and with all your soul, that you may live.”*

Notice that the purpose of this heart circumcision is so that you and your descendants may love the LORD with all your heart and soul, and that you may “live.” Notice also that spiritual circumcision is in the foreskin of your heart, the spiritual procreation force. Notice that it goes to your descendants as well as it did to Abraham’s.

**The New Testament explains spiritual circumcision.**

**Romans 2:29 says,**

*29 “[B]ut he is a Jew who is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the Spirit, not in the letter; whose praise is not from men but from God.”*

Spiritual circumcision is simply the removal of our old nature replaced with the Holy Spirit.

The Word speaks to us in Colossians that our spiritual circumcision is also a tremendous gift from God. Not only is it a gift, it says that it is past tense, something that happened at our New Birth. While this is true, like Abram, we must confirm this great blood covenant by confirming our spiritual circumcision. We must know for sure that this is a finished work. God has circumcised our spirit, our heart, through the New Birth; however, our mind, the old nature, fights against this. We need to take our thoughts captive and bring them to the cross. We discuss this in more detail on the following pages. God told Abram that if he did not keep this rite, that the covenant would be broken. That, on the surface, sounds like a paradox when compared to the bloody ditch in Genesis chapter 15 where God did all the work.

This Scripture in Colossians indicates a tender balance between just recognizing the free gift and truly walking in it, receiving it, believing it, acting on it and giving ourselves to it. If we don’t do our part, we are forsaking the benefits of the covenant. Many people find themselves in bondage feeling forsaken by God. If we only knew how God, in His great love, is longing for us to receive, we would not doubt Him.

**Notice the finished work of spiritual circumcision listed in the following passage. It is a past tense statement.**

**Colossians 2:11-15 says,**

*11 “In Him you were [past tense] also circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, by putting off the body of the sins of the flesh, by the circumcision of Christ,*

*12 buried with Him in baptism, in which you also were raised with Him through faith in the working of God, who raised Him from the dead.*

*13 And you, being dead in your trespasses and the uncircumcision of your flesh, He has made alive together with Him, having forgiven you all trespasses,*

*14 having wiped out the handwriting of requirements that was against us, which was contrary*



*to us. And He has taken it out of the way, having nailed it to the cross.*

*15 Having disarmed principalities and powers, He made a public spectacle of them, triumphing over them in it.”*

***Then in chapter 3 Paul goes on to tell us to put to death our old nature and to put on the new nature.*** The word “put” is a personal verb. It requires our choice and our action.

**Colossians 3:5 says,**

*5 “Therefore put to death your members which are on the earth: fornication, uncleanness, passion, evil desire, and covetousness, which is idolatry.”*

**Colossians 3:12 says,**

*12 “Therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, put on tender mercies, kindness, humility, meekness, longsuffering.”*

I submit that taking up our cross daily confirms and establishes our spiritual circumcision. Even though it may be a past tense fact, we do not realize the benefits until we make the choice to deny our old nature. Some people misunderstand the term, “taking up your cross.” It is simply deciding that you no longer wish to maintain your old fallen spiritual nature, the flesh, but you are fully committed to allowing the nature of Jesus to have His way in you.

I believe that there is a spiritual law that goes like this: “The more you take up your cross, the more benefits of His cross you will receive.” I believe that we can remain spiritually bankrupt just because we do not take up our crosses. I am not sure what this will feel like when we get to Heaven, but I can tell you that I do not want to be guilty of rejecting the great blessings and gifts of God that He so painfully paid for. Do you?

This “taking up our cross” can take various forms for different people. It can also be a greatly misunderstood “religious” term that can be abused. However, I believe that we can generalize it as follows:

1. We respond to God’s great love and we have a great desire to love God back. Therefore, we continue in His Word to communicate with Him. While in His Word we see the pattern of holiness, the character of Jesus.

2. We humble ourselves to use the Word as a mirror to detect those areas of our lives that do not resemble God’s character. The Holy Spirit will actively work in us to bring those issues to the surface.

3. We are simply honest. We agree with God about our condition and confess it to Him. The word “confess” carries with it the meaning “to agree with.” I have personally seen horrible spiritual disasters in people who did not exercise gut-level honesty!

4. As we confess our sin, the circumcision is made complete experientially, or at least, it is carried to the next step.

**1 John 1:9** says,

*9 “If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.”*

The terms *cleansing from all unrighteousness* and *forgiveness* carry with them the root meaning of the word that means *cutting away with a surgeon’s knife*. That is circumcision. Yes, we are already spiritually circumcised, but with each process we are experientially circumcised.

**What Abram did in the circumcision in his flesh is a type and shadow of our spiritual circumcision.**

**Genesis 17:24-27** says,

*24 “Abraham was ninety-nine years old when he was circumcised in the flesh of his foreskin.*

*25 And Ishmael his son was thirteen years old when he was circumcised in the flesh of his foreskin.*

*26 That very same day Abraham was circumcised, and his son Ishmael;*

*27 and all the men of his house, born in the house or bought with money from a foreigner, were circumcised with him.”*

**Watchman Nee writes:**

*To be a Christian without total dedication to God is an astonishing thing. This is His right, not a favor we are showing Him. I am not my own. Dare I purloin<sup>17</sup> what is His? 1 Corinthians 6:19.*

**Henry Clay Trumbull, for most of his life, researched blood covenants in ancient cultures, including Bible cultures. In his book, The Blood Covenant<sup>18</sup> he states:**

*The recognition of the covenant of blood in the rite of circumcision, throws light on an obscure passage in the life of Moses, as recorded in Exodus 4:20-26. Moses, himself a child of the covenant, had neglected the circumcision of his own first-born; and so he had been unfaithful to the covenant of Abraham. While on his way from the Wilderness of Sinai to Egypt with a message from God to Pharaoh, concerning the un-covenanted first-born of the Egyptians, Moses was met by a startling providence and came face to face with death – possible with a bloody death of some sort. "The Lord met him, and sought to kill him," it is said (Exodus 4:24). It seems to have been perceived, both by Moses and his wife, that they were being cut off from a farther share in God's covenant-plans for the descendants of Abraham, because of their failure to conform to their obligations in the covenant of Abraham.*

*"Then Zipporah took a sharp stone and cut off the foreskin of her son and cast it at Moses' feet, and said, 'Surely you are a husband of blood to me!' So He let him go. Then she said, 'You are a husband of blood!' – because of the circumcision" (Exodus 4:25-26).*

---

<sup>17</sup> Purloin – to steal something especially when the theft breaks another's trust.

<sup>18</sup> H. Clay Trumbull, *The Blood Covenant*. Impact Books Inc., Kirkwood, MO; 1975, pages 221-223.

*So He, the Lord, let Moses alone, He spared him, as one newly true to the covenant of Abraham, and newly safe within its bounds. Then Zipporah said again, "A bridegroom of blood (husband of blood) are thou, because of the circumcision."*

*The Hebrew word "khathan," here translated "bridegroom or husband of blood," has as its root idea, the binding through severing, the covenanting by blood; an idea that is in the marriage-rite, as the Orientals view it, and that is in the rite of circumcision, also. Indeed, in the Arabic, the corresponding term (khatan) is applied interchangeably to one who is a relation by the way of one's wife, and to one who is circumcised. Hence, the words of Zipporah would imply that, by this rite of circumcision, she and her child were brought into blood-covenant relations with the descendants of Abraham, and her husband also was now saved to that covenant; whereas before they were in danger of being covenanted to a bloody death.*

*It is as though Zipporah had said: "We are now newly covenanted to each other, and to God, by blood; whereas, but for this, we should have been covenanted to slaughter [or death] by blood."*

**Notice the supernatural working in the lives of Abraham and Moses after they responded to the blood covenant, the Cross, with their own circumcision.**

Abraham witnessed the bloody trench, representing the Cross of Jesus. But the supernatural did not operate in Abraham's life until he responded with his own circumcision. Of course to us that means spiritual circumcision. Can you imagine a 99-year-old man and old barren Sarah giving birth not only to Isaac, but also to all of future Israel, and indeed to you and me as in the seed of Jesus Christ? That was a big supernatural act that I submit would not have happened unless Abraham responded properly.

How about Moses? He was going to die because he had failed to circumcise his son. Then, when his wife Zipporah finally complied, look what happened immediately thereafter.

**Exodus 4:24-27 says,**

*24 “And it came to pass on the way, at the encampment, that the LORD met him and sought to kill him.*

*25 Then Zipporah took a sharp stone and cut off the foreskin of her son and cast it at Moses’ feet, and said, “Surely you are a husband of blood to me!”*

*26 So He let him go. Then she said, “You are a husband of blood!” – because of the circumcision.*

*27 And the LORD said to Aaron, “Go into the wilderness to meet Moses.” So he went and met him on the mountain of God, and kissed him.”*

God sent Moses and Aaron, two men, to destroy the most powerful nation on earth! That is supernatural. God wants to do the supernatural through you. He wants to renew your hope in lost dreams, a devastated past, a season of what you considered “waiting too long.” All you have to do is to get your old flesh nature out of the way, allow God to spiritually circumcise your thinking, repent for acts and thoughts coming from your old nature, and look out!

**The bottom line.**

God was in the bloody trench; He bore the Cross for us. He did the work that only He could do. That was a free gift. He told Abram in Genesis chapter 17 that he needed to do what he could do. For us that means:

1. Knowing that we have been “circumcised” spiritually with the New Birth.
2. Confirming that circumcision by confessing our sin and refusing to let remnants of our old nature to control us. That is also a free gift. It is a miracle, but we need to cooperate, otherwise, we could experience the “bloody death” that was on its way to Moses.

Be intense with God. Be real with God. Keep your “knife” handy! The rewards are beyond comprehension. We also have an opportunity to give God a “good day” and bless Him! Looking at Moses and Zipporah, we can learn that we are in grave danger if we ignore this rite.

*Reproduction, resale or internet posting prohibited*

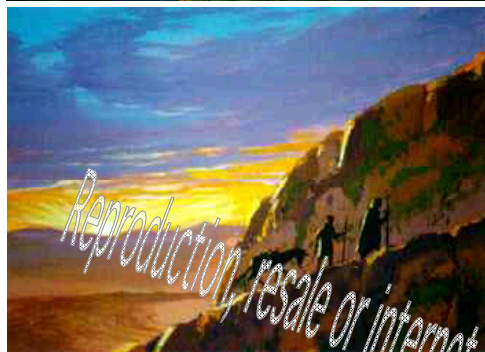
## Chapter 12

### The Blood Covenant Breaks Curses

**Genesis 22:1-2 says,**

*1 “Now it came to pass after these things that God tested [to assay] <sup>19</sup> Abraham, and said to him, ‘Abraham!’ And he said, ‘Here I am.’*

*2 Then He said, ‘Take now your son, your only son Isaac, whom you love, and go to the land of Moriah, and offer him there as a burnt offering on one of the mountains of which I shall tell you.’”*



There have been many speculations, wonderful sermons and even books on Genesis chapter 22, as to why God asked Abraham to obey such a command to take the life of his promised son Isaac, or the life of any human being.

I do not submit that what I am writing here is the only application for this very important chapter, but I can tell you how God used this in many real life situations with my wife and me and other personal friends. I can testify how God used this chapter in several situations in my family. The fibers of our lives were greatly stretched in a profitable way.

---

<sup>19</sup> Assay: an examination and analysis of something, chemical testing carried out to determine the composition or a substance of the concentration of various components in a substance, a sample of material for analysis.

These experiences involved generational curses. We have dealt with many and have watched the Lord overcome them through many trials and with much grace and mercy. He is still at work in our lives, as He is in the lives of all of His children.

This chapter in the book of Genesis is a type and shadow of God offering His own Son Jesus on the Cross and of the resulting resurrection. It shows that when one blood covenant partner gives his son, then the other one is obligated to give His Son. This story shows that God does indeed “test” us, not so that we may pass or fail a test, but so that He can “assay” us to see if we continually follow and obey Him no matter the cost. He already knows how the test will come out, but He simply wants us to know ourselves. I suppose there is a display here for Satan as well.

Beyond these wonderful symmetries and analogies, there is another sometimes overlooked, issue: God was walking Abraham up the hill in order to overcome his generational curses.

I submit that Abraham and Sarah were under the curse of being without child. That was one of the most serious and shameful maladies of that age. God gave Abram the promise of having a child, and through that child many nations would be blessed. Abram did his best to obey and follow the Lord, until Genesis chapter 16 when he took matters into his own hands and produced Ishmael. Then, in Genesis chapter 21 the supernatural promise was fulfilled; Isaac, the son of promise, was born of barren Sarah and Abraham. One would have thought that the issue of being childless was over. Right? Wrong!

I submit that Isaac and Abraham were still subject to the curse and that they needed to complete the overcoming process with God to destroy the curse.

**Deuteronomy chapter 28 is a good place to study curses and blessings.**

A curse is the opposite of a blessing. A blessing is some type of prosperity from God that is the result of good and positive words or deeds. A curse is some type of failure caused or propagated by wicked or negative words or deeds that can be perpetrated by people and satanic beings. In Deuteronomy 28 Moses lists the



blessings if one obeys the commandments of God, and the curses if one does not obey the commandments of God. According to Deuteronomy chapters 27-30, blessings come by hearing and obeying God, and curses come by not hearing and/or not obeying God. The good or evil acts from former generations come down to you as well.

Exodus 34:5-8 says that curses are passed down to future generations.

**Exodus 34:7 says,**

*7 “Keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity and transgression and sin, by no means clearing the guilty, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children and the children’s children to the third and the fourth generation.”*

God’s original purpose was for us to have blessings passed down to future generations, which would have resulted from man’s free will in right relationship to Him. However, justice demands that if blessings can be passed down, so must curses be passed down.

Notice, in this passage of Scripture there seems to be a paradox. How can God keep mercy and forgive or remove sin, but not clear the guilty?

No one knew how this was possible until Jesus was revealed as the Lamb of God. All of God’s wrath was put on Jesus at the Cross, nothing was left out. All of your curses and mine were on Jesus. That is how God can be merciful, removing sin, without clearing the guilty. He made Jesus “guilty” for you and me.

Wouldn’t it be nice if we could just read the Bible, discover that we are forgiven and that Jesus took our curse, then say a nice tidy prayer and see the blessings come? Sorry, often it does not work that way, although sometimes it has and can. Curses can be broken by prayer, however, my experience has been going through the hard times of the overcoming process, much in the same way as Abraham did with Isaac.

I believe that Genesis chapter 22 and the entire Book of Revelation indicate to us that we realize blessings by overcoming through the death and resurrection process.

**Revelation 12:11 says,**

*11 “And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony, and they did not love their lives to the death.”*

The blood of the Lamb is all about our blood covenant exchange of character. We are new creations in Christ who are no longer subject to the curse. However, the word of our testimony represents spiritual warfare against Satan. Notice very carefully that we must not love our lives to the death. This indicates a death and resurrection experience.

I believe that while blessings are indeed our rightful inheritance, they are resisted by Satan. Through the power of God we have to overcome in order to realize the blessings.

**Look at what these Scriptures say about the Kingdom of God.**

**Hebrews 12:26-29 says,**

*26 “[W]hose voice then shook the earth; but now He has promised, saying, ‘Yet once more I shake not only the earth, but also heaven.’*

*27 Now this, ‘Yet once more,’ indicates the removal of those things that are being shaken, as of things that are made, that the things which cannot be shaken may remain.*

*28 Therefore, since we are receiving a kingdom, which cannot be shaken, let us have grace, by which we may serve God acceptably with reverence and godly fear.*

*29 For our God is a consuming fire.”*

**Acts 14:22 says,**

*22 “strengthening the souls of the disciples, exhorting them to continue in the faith, and saying, ‘We must through many tribulations enter the kingdom of God.’”*

**Matthew 11:12 says,**

*12 “And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffers violence, and the violent take it by force.”*

The word *violence* carries with it the meaning *to amputate*. Some have said that it is similar to the violence that a tree root exerts when it grows through a concrete sidewalk.

The Book of Revelation gives us instructions on living this life in this violence mindset. I submit that the Book of Revelation was intended for more than Western-minded Bible scholars to determine exactly how and when the world will end and when Jesus will return. It does give many clues and can be a picture of the end of the history of this world as we know it. Actually, the Lord used this type of writing to bring me to the New Birth. However, it is much more than that, it is also a picture of ending our own generational curses.

John wrote Revelation while he was suffering on the Isle of Patmos. He was trying to make some sense out of his life and he owed some explanation to his churches on why they were being persecuted so violently and why some of the believers were being beheaded and tortured. Notice in Revelation chapter 5, there is a word picture of Jesus at the Throne holding the Scroll. We know from the Book of Zechariah that the Scroll represents God’s inheritance for man and the curse for Satan.

Jesus wants us to know that our curse has been put on Him, and that the blessings are due us, but that we must go through the “shaking” process to shake them loose from Satan. Actually, Jesus is doing the shaking, and our part is to believe in His blood, speak the Word against the enemy and not hold on to our old nature but rather continually take up our cross and walk in repentance and in the Spirit rather than in the flesh.

This is worked out in Oriental Eastern mystic writings in the rest of Revelation as Jesus revealed to John, in picture form, something that would show him, and you and me the prophetic victory for his sufferings. Chapters 20-22 of the book of Revelation reveal our anointing for ministry after we go through the overcoming process.

**Now, let's refer back to Abraham and Isaac.**

**Genesis 22:3-14 says,**

3 *“So Abraham rose early in the morning and saddled his donkey, and took two of his young men with him, and Isaac his son; and he split the wood for the burnt offering, and arose and went to the place of which God had told him.*

4 *Then on the third day Abraham lifted his eyes and saw the place afar off.*

5 *And Abraham said to his young men, ‘Stay here with the donkey; the lad and I will go yonder and worship, and we will come back to you.’*

6 *So Abraham took the wood of the burnt offering and laid it on Isaac his son; and he took the fire in his hand, and a knife, and the two of them went together.*

7 *But Isaac spoke to Abraham his father and said, ‘My father!’ And he said, ‘Here I am, my son.’ Then he said, ‘Look, the fire and the wood, but where is the lamb for a burnt offering?’*

8 *And Abraham said, ‘My son, God will provide for Himself the lamb for a burnt offering.’ So the two of them went together.*

9 *Then they came to the place of which God had told him. And Abraham built an altar there and placed the wood in order; and he bound Isaac his son and laid him on the altar, upon the wood.*

10 *And Abraham stretched out his hand and took the knife to slay his son.*

11 *But the Angel of the LORD called to him from heaven and said, ‘Abraham, Abraham!’ So he said, ‘Here I am.’*

12 *And He said, ‘Do not lay your hand on the lad, or do anything to him; for now I know that you fear God, since you have not withheld your son, your only son, from Me.’*

13 *Then Abraham lifted his eyes and looked, and there behind him was a ram caught in a thicket by its*

*horns. So Abraham went and took the ram, and offered it up for a burnt offering instead of his son.*

*14 And Abraham called the name of the place, The-LORD-Will-Provide; as it is said to this day, ‘In the Mount of the LORD it shall be provided.’”*

I ask you a question. If the ram caught in the thicket represents the substitution of Jesus being slain for our sins and our curses, then where and when did that animal appear, at the bottom of the hill or at the top? Actually, it is *over* the top of the hill. The ram was *over* the top; it could not be seen until Abram was at the top.

In like manner, where does the Lamb of God appear for *your curse*? In your easy chair, or in the white knuckles and bloody fingernails of prayer and searching the Word to hear what God is saying about your life and death situation?

I knew a family who had this testimony. In the 1940s when the man was seven years old, his fourteen-year-old sister contracted a generational brain tumor, cancer. She was the loveliest person he knew. She was totally unselfish and kind. He remembers the pain and agony the entire family experienced for the years preceding her death and even for years and decades after.

When this man’s child, in 1991, was diagnosed with a brain tumor, he knew immediately what it was. He and his wife were smitten with pain. But the Lord spoke, time and time again. He would speak at 2 AM when their sleep could no longer remain. He would speak during the day in His Word, through others, and in so many ways that everything would be all right. They truly expected a miracle healing, but they heard from Him that their path would be different.

In spite of the promises given to them, like Abraham who also received the promised child, symptoms worsened. Daily, hourly, they had to renew their faith; they had to find breath to praise the Lord in all circumstances. Many of their promises God gave to them were based upon what would seem like “end time” Scriptures. It was the end time for this curse!

Finally, surgery took place. After six hours, the surgeon told them that when they went in, the tumor, previously shown on many MRI's, was gone, and all they found was just scar tissue. During those six hours he and his wife were walking up the hill with their child, giving the child to the Lord one layer at a time.

One year later, they had a follow up MRI. While in the machine with his child, the father asked the Lord, “Why did we have to go through surgery and all the heartache for months, why could you not have just healed her by a miracle?” The Lord answered so clearly saying, “If I had, the curse would have remained. When did I appear as the Lamb to take away Abraham’s curse? Was it at the bottom or (over) the top of the hill? If I had appeared at the bottom with a miracle, the curse would have been perpetuated. But I had you walk all the way up so that you could experience My resurrection overcoming power to remove this curse forever.”

**Genesis 22:15-17 says,**

*15 “Then the Angel of the LORD called to Abraham a second time out of heaven,*

*16 and said: ‘By Myself I have sworn, says the LORD, because you have done this thing, and have not withheld your son, your only son –*

*17 blessing I will bless you, and multiplying I will multiply your descendants as the stars of the heaven and as the sand which is on the seashore; and your descendants shall possess the gate of their enemies.’”*

**Notice the promise and confirmation of blessings and anointed ministry after this type of testing and trial!**

**Genesis 22:18-19 says,**

*18 “In your seed all the nations of the earth shall be blessed, because you have obeyed My voice.*

*19 So Abraham returned to his young men, and they rose and went together to Beersheba; and Abraham dwelt at Beersheba.”*

**Galatians 3:13-14 says,**

*13 “Christ has redeemed us from the curse of the law, having become a curse for us (for it is written, “Cursed is everyone who hangs on a tree”),*

*14 that the blessing of Abraham might come upon the Gentiles in Christ Jesus, that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.”*

While the big picture of Abraham overcoming this curse was so that we might receive the same blessing through Jesus, there was also an immediate blessing within Abraham’s family. Notice that in Genesis 20:20-24 that Abraham’s brother Nahor and his family began bearing a lot of children.

I have often wondered why Abraham believed that Isaac could be raised from the dead.

**Hebrews 11:19 says,**

*19 “[Abraham] concluding that God was able to raise him [Isaac] up, even from the dead, from which he also received him in a figurative sense.”*

Could it have been that when God appeared to Abraham that he saw not only the incarnation, as Jesus stated in John 8:56, but that he also saw Jesus the resurrected One?

When God takes what He promised to us, and even the promises that we have already received, through death and resurrection, they are ours for eternity. Satan can no longer take them. Also, these resurrected promises are tools in the hand of God to perform His mighty purposes on earth and for eternity!

Can you see this resurrected One in your circumstance? Can you see God walking you up your hill? Has He failed to give you the miracle at the bottom of this hill? Maybe it is for your benefit and for the benefit of His Kingdom. Maybe it is to put some generational demons into early retirement as in the Book of Revelation chapters 20-22.

Can you see Him bringing you face to face with the absolute worse conclusion to your suffering and tribulation right now? Will you walk all the way up the hill praising Him every step of the way? Will you just stop everything and concentrate

on Jesus in the Word and in prayer long enough for Him to make this real in your life so that you will have the confidence of Abraham?

*Reproduction, resale or internet posting prohibited*



**Help Wanted**  
**Construction Workers**

Limited number of positions open for the construction of New Jerusalem, a City designed by Jehovah God and being built by Jesus of Nazareth. Exceptional pay. The Master has a habit of paying for a full day in compensation for one hour of work. Fringe benefits include health insurance, retirement with full pay, protection from all forms of evil, relief from need and want; free emotional and psychological counseling.

Job consists of using the Master's own tools and property to add several finishing sections to the City, called New Jerusalem.

Qualifications: Applicants must be willing to submit to being changed (during a probation period) from a foolish to a wise virgin in the context of Matthew chapter 25.

Warning-Disclosure: Many former applicants have been disappointed and quit during the probation period when they discovered that the Master's tools were their problems, perplexities, infirmities and handicaps which have been strained through the Master's Cross, washed and coated in His Blood, disarmed and defused of all evil and their ability to harm, and converted to a highly valuable construction material known as jewels through an amazing, but time proven process known as "overcoming." Many preferred to stay as foolish virgins and see these "tools" as enemies. When their Master returned at the end of the probation period, they did not even recognize Him.

After the conversion process from foolish to wise, the few that made it discovered that they had been carrying around the most valuable raw material in the universe. When they plunged these problems into the Cross the very nature of these former problems had actually been changed from bitter to sweet, from enemy to friend, and their reward was beyond explanation. Some actually reported that they saw wolves fellowshipping with lambs.

Interested parties should contact:  
The Holy Spirit

## Chapter 13

### Have You Been a Slave and Didn't Know It?

When Jacob and his twelve sons first settled in Egypt, there were only seventy Hebrews in total. Hundreds of years later there were two and a half million Hebrews. During this time the Egyptians were working the Hebrews as their slaves (Exodus 1:8-11). You may recall in previous chapters that God told Abraham that his family would go into bondage into a strange land. This did not catch God off guard.

**Exodus 1:13-14** says,

*13 "So the Egyptians made the children of Israel serve with rigor.*

*14 And they made their lives bitter with hard bondage – in mortar, in brick, and in all manner of service in the field. All their service in which they made them serve was with rigor."*



Real slavery is spiritual slavery, something that has someone in bondage on the inside. I believe that these Hebrews, like the rest of us, were slaves before they became slaves. I believe that they were already spiritual slaves and did not know it. Perhaps it was God's mercy that allows people to experience great pain in their lives just so that they will cry out to Him. Then, in His mercy, He can point out that the true issue is spiritual slavery and He can then go to work to solve the true problem.

Also, I believe that when they were set free from Egypt, that they carried their slavery with them. They all died in the Wilderness from the slavery mindset, except for Joshua and Caleb. It took the new generation of those born in the Wilderness to make it to the Promise Land.

The realms of the flesh, the world and Satan all operate on the principle of slavery. Egypt is a shadow and type of the “world” system. Pharaoh is a shadow and type of Satan. God's people were in bondage to the world and Satan, and certainly to their flesh, their old nature. They were not regenerated people. The Book of Exodus not only is a shadow and type of how God saves people from their ultimate bondage, giving them the new birth, but it also stands as a powerful example of how God wants to save you and me, His children, from the slavery issues even after the new birth. This is how we will be looking at the blood covenant in the Book of Exodus.

**Slavery is the very foundation of the world system and Satan's kingdom.**

Slavery puts others to hard labor to accomplish something profitable for the slave owner. In the natural sense, it brings great profit to the owners of plantations to have slaves work the crops. They don't have to pay them normal wages; they simply need to give them the basic food and shelter to keep them alive so that they may continue to work.

Spiritual slavery puts humans to work for Satan's profit, to accomplish his rebellious purposes. He puts God's greatest creation to work for him and binds man in such a position so that he does not even recognize God much less fellowship with Him. If God is recognized then He is portrayed as a mean hard taskmaster.

God was not caught off guard, neither was He indifferent. He heard the cry of the Israelites and felt their pain, as He hears and feels yours as well.

**Exodus 2:23-25** says,

*23 “Now it happened in the process of time that the king of Egypt died. Then the children of Israel groaned because of the bondage, and they cried out; and their cry came up to God because of the bondage.*

*24 So God heard their groaning, and God remembered His covenant with Abraham, with Isaac, and with Jacob.*

*25 And God looked upon the children of Israel, and God acknowledged them.”*

**Psalm 31:7 says,**

*7 “I will be glad and rejoice in Your mercy, for You have considered my trouble; You have known my soul in adversities.”*

Notice that God remembered His blood covenant! This is key. His people may be living in something less than the blood covenant exchange and blessings, but God is not inactive. He remembers the blood that was shed in the ditch with Abram back in Genesis chapter 15. He remembers that He agreed to take the exchange of whatever Abram and his descendants would suffer.

**Exodus 3:7-10 says,**

*7 “And the LORD said: ‘I have surely seen the oppression of My people who are in Egypt, and have heard their cry because of their taskmasters, for I know their sorrows.*

*8 So I have come down to deliver them out of the hand of the Egyptians, and to bring them up from that land to a good and large land, to a land flowing with milk and honey, to the place of the Canaanites and the Hittites and the Amorites and the Perizzites and the Hivites and the Jebusites.*

*9 Now therefore, behold, the cry of the children of Israel has come to Me, and I have also seen the oppression with which the Egyptians oppress them.*

*10 Come now, therefore, and I will send you to Pharaoh that you may bring My people, the children of Israel, out of Egypt.’”*

**Freedom from slavery was and is a major issue with the work of God in our lives.**

Isaiah chapter 61 was Jesus' mission statement in prophecy hundreds of years before His birth. It has to do with freeing slaves to receive their blood covenant blessing. The blessings

actually include the entire chapter of Isaiah 61, but the following are just the first few verses.

**Isaiah 61:1-4 says,**

*1 “The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon Me, because the LORD has anointed Me to preach good tidings to the poor; He has sent Me to heal the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to those who are bound;*

*2 To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all who mourn,*

*3 To console those who mourn in Zion, to give them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they may be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that He may be glorified.*

*4 And they shall rebuild the old ruins, they shall raise up the former desolations, and they shall repair the ruined cities, the desolations of many generations.”*

In verse two, “the acceptable year of the Lord,” refers to the Year of Jubilee as recorded in Leviticus chapter 25. This describes that every seven Sabbaths, or every 50<sup>th</sup> year, that there would be a “super Sabbath,” a year when all the slaves were set free and all debts and mortgages were cancelled.

When Jesus began His earthly ministry, He quoted the first few verses of this prophecy as recorded in Luke chapter 4. He stopped at the Year of Jubilee, stating that it was now fulfilled. He did not continue to the Day of Vengeance of God. Jesus began this vengeance at the Cross and resurrection. We are in the Day of Vengeance now, and it will continue to progress until the final vengeance that Jesus takes on Satan at His ultimate coming. Every time we overcome a generational curse of some type of slavery or bondage, the demons that had been perpetuating those curses and/or slavery are put into “early retirement,” vengeance is taken upon them. This could not happen until the vengeance of the Cross and resurrection of

Jesus. That was the beginning of vengeance. Now as Jesus' body we are His agents carrying out that vengeance.

While the Year of Jubilee is mentioned in Leviticus 25, the Day of Vengeance is described in Leviticus 26, and in verse 26:25 it even says, "And I will bring a sword against you that will execute the vengeance of the covenant." The covenant contains deliverance from slavery, but it comes with vengeance on those who are opposed to God's purposes, especially Satan.

**Now, how about your slavery?**

The Lord may have allowed you to begin to hurt as He did the Israelites so that you also may recognize your need to cry out to Him, and your need for the blood covenant.

Have you ever felt like you were in slavery? Have you ever felt like life has been beating you up with "hard bondage?"

God cares about these feelings. We will learn more about God's great concern for you and His desire to set you free from all types of prisons, slavery, and bondages! God's great mission for you is to make you a free person.

God chose Moses to go to the ruler of Egypt, Pharaoh, and confront him to let His people go (Exodus 5:1).

Since 1979 Jesus has progressively set me free from "prisons" that I had been put into by sin. A lot of these "sins" were things that others had placed on me. Some of them were my own doing. Some of them were simply things that were passed down from former generations. I believe that all three of these are causes of bondages and prisons in our lives.

So many people are too proud to admit that they need help or that they need to be set free from slavery.

**John 8:31-36 says,**

*31 "Then Jesus said to those Jews who believed Him, 'If you abide in My word, you are My disciples indeed.*

*32 And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.'*

*33 They answered Him, 'We are Abraham's descendants, and have never been in bondage to anyone. How can you say, "You will be made free?"'*

*34 Jesus answered them, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, whoever commits sin is a slave of sin.*

*35 And a slave does not abide in the house forever, but a son abides forever.*

*36 Therefore if the Son makes you free, you shall be free indeed.'*"

Notice, Jesus spoke this to the Jews "who had believed on him." They did not want to hear that they were slaves and that they needed someone to set them free. So many Christians today are the same way.

Paul tells us in Romans chapter 6 that we have "already" been set free from sin's slavery.

**Romans 6:16-18 says,**

*16 "Do you not know that to whom you present yourselves slaves to obey, you are that one's slaves whom you obey, whether of sin leading to death, or of obedience leading to righteousness?"*

*17 But God be thanked that though you were slaves of sin, yet you obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine to which you were delivered.*

*18 And having been set free from sin, you became slaves of righteousness."*

He warns us in this chapter that our choices can keep us in bondages.

It is true that we have been (past tense) set free. It is also true that we need to be (future tense) set free. Legally, we are no longer slaves to sin and Satan once we make Jesus our Lord. However, there is a progressive realization of that fact. Progressively, we work out that truth in our lives.

**Philippians 2:12-13 (NIV, added phrases are from Amplified Bible) says,**

*12 "Therefore, my dear friends, as you have always obeyed – not only in my presence, but now much more in my absence – continue to work out your salvation with fear and trembling,*

*13 [Not in your own strength] for it is God who works in you [energizing and creating in you the power and desire] to will and to act according to his good purpose.”*

**Our freedom was established as a finished work of Jesus by His death and resurrection.**

However, even though our freedom is a free gift, an inheritance, we will not enjoy our inheritance without going through the process of overcoming.

**Revelation 21:7** says,

*7 “He who overcomes shall inherit all things, and I will be his God and he shall be My son.”*

***We must cooperate with God to realize the Year of Jubilee and the Day of Vengeance, both of which are our inheritance as indicated in Isaiah 61.***

The Day of Vengeance is not a neat and tidy operation, and often it includes suffering and tribulation and spiritual warfare. A good example for visualizing this truth is the story of the Hebrews coming out of slavery in Egypt and going through the desert toward the land promised to them by God. This story is recorded in the Books of Exodus and Numbers.

The Israelites were slaves to the Egyptians for over 400 years. Egypt is the type of the “world” to which we were slaves prior to Jesus saving us. I don't think we can imagine how deep this slavery mindset was imbedded into the soul of these Hebrews. Generation after generation these people had no identity, the husbands did not know when their wives would be taken away, and the mothers did not know when their children would be taken away. They had no rights whatsoever.

God sent a deliverer, Moses, to confront the slave-master, Pharaoh. Jesus came and confronted our slave-master Satan. God knew that we could not free ourselves, that we needed someone who could deal with our real slave driver, Satan.

The Hebrews were led across the Red Sea in a supernatural way, out of the hands of Pharaoh. Their former slave-masters



had no more dominion over them. Likewise, we were baptized into Christ and have been taken out of the hands of Satan.

God did not take the Hebrews directly to the Promised Land. He led them through the desert. The deserts of your life are going to come. They are part of God's program of deliverance from slavery, and you need to know how to respond in faith. The Hebrews did not respond in faith. Except for Joshua and Caleb, they all died in the desert. However, their descendants made it to the Promised Land. That is a picture of our old nature dying in our "deserts" and our New Birth nature obtaining God's promises, everything we need for life and godliness (2 Peter 1:3).

Joshua and Caleb were *different*. If you study their lifestyle, they hung around the "tent of meeting" even after the others went home. They were hungry to hear and see God. Their lifestyle just naturally instilled faith, and that faith spoke faith-filled words. Their faith and their words took them into the Promise Land, when no other Hebrews from their generation made it in. All the others saw the "giants" and spoke negative, fear-filled words (Numbers 13-14).

**Take a lesson from the First Testament.**

We see in Hebrews chapters 3 and 4 that God tells New Testament believers to be warned of the ways of the First Testament children of God.

God provided for the Israelites in the desert in a marvelous way. Several times He provided for water to gush out of a rock. He provided fresh bread from Heaven every morning (Exodus 16:15). Their clothes and shoes never wore out. God turned the bitter pool at Marah into a wonderful fresh-water lake (Exodus 15). Yet they kept murmuring against God and Moses because they were not used to living by faith in the unseen God. They continued to want to live by their natural senses, even preferring slavery.

These Hebrews show us that being a slave for a long time can give us a slavery mindset that is not easily overcome. God knows how to walk us through the overcoming process, but so many times we do not like God's ways.

**What are some of the symptoms of the slavery mindset?**

Give yourself a check-up. However, as you go through this, please keep in mind that God does not want you to become condemned or shamed if any of these attributes are found. He is simply trying to get you to see the invisible slavery so that He can set you free. Just imagine yourself in a penitentiary with Jesus at the gate holding the key to your release. Don't be ashamed of the symptoms, perhaps addictions, improper behavior or the other attributes listed here, just get out! Allow Him to set you free!

God created you to reveal Him to this lost world, to glorify Himself through you. If you are settled in mediocrity without any desire to allow God to set you free, you will not only miss God's purpose for your life, but you will also miss the wonderful reward of really being free!

***Overcoming slavery is necessary for your own prosperity.***

**3 John 1:2 says,**

2 *“Beloved, I pray that you may prosper in all things and be in health, just as your soul prospers.”*

The word ‘*prosper*’ means having a good journey. Outward blessings in our natural lives come as our soul prospers.

There is a good chance that you inherited your slavery, and even if you were the cause of it, you must know the love of God. He uses His love to bring you to Him, not condemnation. God does not blame! He took the blame for you! Run to Him with your slavery and allow Him to heal you! He takes you just the way you are, but He loves you too much to leave you that way!

One of the sneakiest types of slavery is slavery to oneself, otherwise known as selfishness. When we continue to yield to our own selfish desires, we become slaves to our old fallen nature, the flesh.

***A lack of identity is the primary attribute of a slave.***

Slaves obtain their identity from something or someone else besides God. That is why you see people in the American culture running around trying to get fancy cars, having certain types of friends, dressing a certain way, being part of a movie star's fan club, etc. Some obtain their identity by being on a

certain corporate payroll, or living in an elite neighborhood. In some cultures it may include belonging to the proper tribe or family. They are trying to define who they are by how they look, what they drive and with whom they associate.

How are we supposed to receive our identity? I believe that God created us to receive our identity through having a relationship with another being. We are designed to become like the person with whom we become intimate. We normally receive our identity from the person from whom we obtain our needs. God wants us to become intimate with Him in order to receive our identity from Him. He has taken up residence inside of us. If that does not give you identity, self-worth and dignity, then nothing will!

During the first century, the Romans dragged people from their homes and made them slaves. Families were forever separated; people never again saw their parents, children, brothers, sisters or spouses. Most likely, the women and men were raped and beaten. They completely lost their identity.

***Identity through one's performance is typical of slavery.***

From the slave's point of view his life was now different. He had no identity of his own; he was a non-person. The only thing that he had left was what he could do in his work. The only scale or measure of who he was now was the way he performed his task. If his master looked at him with pleasure because his task was done well, he could feel some self-esteem. Even if another slave admired his work, or perhaps someone else up the ladder of authority gave him one compliment, one measure of "well done," he could feel good about himself.

His life was now a formula. (How I perform) + (how you feel about my performance) = (my self-worth).

The human being was created by God to obtain his worth from God's unconditional love. Now exactly the opposite has happened; humans feel like all love is totally conditioned upon how they perform, and worse, how their masters feel about their performance.

***Is this where critical people come from?***

If this slave's performance is not very good, then he feels condemned. On the flip side, if the slave sees another person

whose performance is not perfect, he is quick to criticize and condemn. I believe in this way, the slave is devaluing the other person, and in some way, feels that he is giving value to himself. God set up a very powerful way to remind those who judge others to feel the pain of it. Be careful with your judgments, they come back at you with at least the same intensity you used if not more. Jesus said in Matthew 7:1, “Judge not, that you be not judged.” Then later, in verses 3 and 4, He explained that your judgment is like a beam compared to the other person's faults, their splinters, that you are judging. The person you are judging may be wrong, but your judgment is even worse.

**James 4:11 says,**

*11 “Do not speak evil of one another, brethren. He who speaks evil of a brother and judges his brother, speaks evil of the law and judges the law. But if you judge the law, you are not a doer of the law but a judge.”*

**Slaves are “men-pleasers”** (Ephesians 6:5-6). They are constantly trying to get the applause and approval of other people. Their work has no other meaning. If their boss, their parents or teachers are pleased with their work, they feel good about their self-worth; if not, they feel like “nothings.” They are always attempting to get friends who will give them their identity and self-worth.

**Slaves work for “eye-service”** (Ephesians 6:5-6).

While they are being watched, they work hard, but as soon as their authorities turn their backs, they goof off. They hold in their resentment of their authority figures. They criticize them and bring them down all the time.

**Slaves Complain.** They always blame their problems on other people. In their minds, their horrible state of being is always somebody else's fault. This often manifests itself by devaluing others with gossip and criticism.

**Some slaves become very good at manipulation.** They learn how to please and even “love” others, so that they will be “loved back.”

***Slaves do not like obeying authority.*** They have learned that authority is bad; they hate their authority figures.

***Slaves control others.*** They have no authority, so they are always manipulating others in order to serve their own needs. Some slaves use their sheer brute force, like shouting and screaming, in order to get others to conform.

***Slaves have no self-esteem.*** They use other people, religion, amusement and immorality, which are some of the same things the Hebrews used in the desert, to achieve some sense of self-worth.

***Slaves become addicts.*** If you are addicted to food, drugs, alcohol, pornography, or even seemingly more benign things like newspapers, TV, computer games, etc., you are a slave. God has the power to make you free. Do not live in condemnation for your failure.

**Use this checklist to see if there are areas of your life that are enslaved and that do not line up with love, with the nature of the Holy Spirit Who dwells in you.**

**Colossians 3:1-25 says,**

*1 "If then you were raised with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ is, sitting at the right hand of God.*

*2 Set your mind on things above, not on things on the earth.*

*3 For you died, and your life is hidden with Christ in God.*

*4 When Christ who is our life appears, then you also will appear with Him in glory.*

*5 Therefore put to death your members which are on the earth: fornication, uncleanness, passion, evil desire, and covetousness, which is idolatry.*

*6 Because of these things the wrath of God is coming upon the sons of disobedience,*

*7 in which you yourselves once walked when you lived in them.*

8 *But now you yourselves are to put off all these: anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy language out of your mouth.*

9 *Do not lie to one another, since you have put off the old man with his deeds,*

10 *and have put on the new man who is renewed in knowledge according to the image of Him who created him,*

11 *where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcised nor uncircumcised, barbarian, Scythian, slave nor free, but Christ is all and in all.*

12 *Therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, put on tender mercies, kindness, humility, meekness, longsuffering;*

13 *bearing with one another, and forgiving one another, if anyone has a complaint against another; even as Christ forgave you, so you also must do.*

14 *But above all these things put on love, which is the bond of perfection.*

15 *And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to which also you were called in one body; and be thankful.*

16 *Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom, teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord.*

17 *And whatever you do in word or deed, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God the Father through Him.*

18 *Wives, submit to your own husbands, as is fitting in the Lord.*

19 *Husbands, love your wives and do not be bitter toward them.*

20 *Children, obey your parents in all things, for this is well pleasing to the Lord.*

21 *Fathers, do not provoke your children, lest they become discouraged.*

*22 Bondservants, obey in all things your masters according to the flesh, not with eyeservice, as men-pleasers, but in sincerity of heart, fearing God.*

*23 And whatever you do, do it heartily, as to the Lord and not to men,*

*24 knowing that from the Lord you will receive the reward of the inheritance; for you serve the Lord Christ.*

*25 But he who does wrong will be repaid for what he has done, and there is no partiality.”*

**Colossians 4:1 says,**

*1 “Masters, give your bondservants what is just and fair, knowing that you also have a Master in heaven.”*

This is a great checklist to use as a mirror for our own lives. If there are areas that do not line up, bring them to God for forgiveness and healing.

Jesus gives us the victory as a done deal! Our faith in His Word is what will deliver us. We need to sharpen our relationship skills with Jesus, speaking the truth to Him, listening to His Word, the Holy Spirit and fellowshiping with the Church. As we do this, as we keep our relationship with Him, then His life in the vine runs through us, His branches (John 15).

**Of Mystery Babylon, the world system ruled by Satan, Jesus speaks an end to its slave tactics in the following passage.**

**Revelation 18:11-13 says,**

*11 “And the merchants of the earth will weep and mourn over her, for no one buys their merchandise anymore:*

*12 merchandise of gold and silver, precious stones and pearls, fine linen and purple, silk and scarlet, every kind of citron wood, every kind of object of ivory, every kind of object of most precious wood, bronze, iron, and marble;*

*13 and cinnamon and incense, fragrant oil and frankincense, wine and oil, fine flour and wheat, cattle and sheep, horses and chariots, and bodies and souls of men.”*

**The blood of Jesus will make you a free person! Appropriate it.**

*Reproduction, resale or internet posting prohibited*



## Chapter 14

### Don't Underestimate the Depth of the Relationship

Dr. Mark Rutland has told a story of an event during his teenage years, probably before he was really saved. He and some buddies (I have made up their names for the benefit of this story), were traveling on a Maryland turnpike. They stopped at a restaurant where they spotted another acquaintance, Eddie, sitting with his girlfriend. One of Rutland's buddies who was drunk, we would call him Tony, sat in the booth with Eddie and his girlfriend. Tony started flirting with the girl. Eddie warned him several times to stop. Finally, when Tony kissed the girl, Eddie violently took Tony in hand and blasted him with his fists, sending Tony right through the plate glass window. As the boys fled in their car, nursing bleeding Tony, Rutland said to him, "Didn't you hear Eddie warn you?" Tony said, "Sure I heard him. I just underestimated the depth of the relationship!"

#### **The Hebrews had become slaves in Egypt.**

They had forgotten their covenant. However, God remembered the blood covenant. He remembered that He had promised to exchange natures with Abram and his descendants. He remembered His covenant to defeat their enemies and to make the Hebrews a blessing to all nations. As we discovered later, that meant bringing the ultimate Lamb of God, the ultimate blood covenant sacrifice through the Hebrew line, the Messiah Jesus.

As a reminder to you before you get too far into this chapter, I have a question: How does God defeat His enemies? His ultimate defeat on His ultimate enemy was nothing less than the resurrection of Jesus. And, in order to accomplish the resurrection, Jesus had to die our death. That way, we also partake of the resurrection!

***It is important that we understand God in the way that Scripture describes Him.***

Man can, and has "created God in his own image" so many times. The Book of Exodus shows us that God is faithful to His family, to His people, and especially to His blood covenant.

**Exodus 3:6-10 says,**

6 *“Moreover He said, ‘I am the God of your father – the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.’ And Moses hid his face, for he was afraid to look upon God.*

7 *And the LORD said: ‘I have surely seen the oppression of My people who are in Egypt, and have heard their cry because of their taskmasters, for I know their sorrows.*

8 *So I have come down to deliver them out of the hand of the Egyptians, and to bring them up from that land to a good and large land, to a land flowing with milk and honey, to the place of the Canaanites and the Hittites and the Amorites and the Perizzites and the Hivites and the Jebusites.*

9 *Now therefore, behold, the cry of the children of Israel has come to Me, and I have also seen the oppression with which the Egyptians oppress them.*

10 *Come now, therefore, and I will send you to Pharaoh that you may bring My people, the children of Israel, out of Egypt.’”*

**Satan always resists God’s Word and His will. Satan and Pharaoh have underestimated the relationship.**

**Exodus 5:22-23 says,**

22 *“So Moses returned to the LORD and said, Lord, why have You brought trouble on this people? Why is it You have sent me?*

23 *For since I came to Pharaoh to speak in Your name, he has done evil to this people; neither have You delivered Your people at all.’”*

***Have you ever felt the way Moses felt as he expressed in the Scripture above?***

He might have expressed it this way. “Lord, I thought I was following You, but all I have is trouble. Why? Why have we not seen deliverance yet?”

**Exodus 6:1-8 says,**

1 *“Then the LORD said to Moses, ‘Now you shall see what I will do to Pharaoh. For with a strong hand he will let them go, and with a strong hand he will drive them out of his land.’*

2 *And God spoke to Moses and said to him: ‘I am the LORD.*

3 *I appeared to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, as God Almighty [most powerful El Shaddai], but by My name LORD [Jehovah] I was not known to them.*

4 *I have also established My covenant with them, to give them the land of Canaan, the land of their pilgrimage, in which they were strangers.*

5 *And I have also heard the groaning of the children of Israel whom the Egyptians keep in bondage, and I have remembered My covenant.*

6 *Therefore say to the children of Israel: ‘I am the LORD; I will bring you out from under the burdens of the Egyptians, I will rescue you from their bondage, and I will redeem you with an outstretched arm and with great judgments.*

7 *I will take you as My people, and I will be your God. Then you shall know that I am the LORD your God who brings you out from under the burdens of the Egyptians.*

8 *And I will bring you into the land which I swore to give to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob; and I will give it to you as a heritage: I am the LORD.”*

When God said, “I am the God of your father – the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob,” I do not think He was simply saying that “I was their God,” but was saying “That is My Name. You see when I walked that blood covenant trench with Abram My name was changed to the God of Abraham.’ When Abram took up his cross with circumcision, his name was changed to Abraham.”

God entered into a deep blood family relationship with Abram and his descendants, including those Hebrews who were slaves in Egypt, and you and me as well.

Notice that in Exodus chapter 3, quoted above, that God said that He was their blood kin, that He had seen their oppression and suffering, and that He had come down to deal with it.

**You are His relative.**

You can still be a slave even when you are related by blood to the Creator God, the One who became a slave for you, in your stead. Even though He was resurrected and gave you this new life, new life that is beyond the dominion of the slave-maker Satan, you can still be in bondage.

When you receive the New Birth, you are born into a new race that is not subject to Satan's slavery; however, you may still be experiencing the left-over slavery from your past life. Nevertheless, because you are God's close relative, His own, He comes to make you a free person, to deliver you from every bondage that the flesh, the world and Satan has put on you.

He calls Israel His first born. He tells Pharaoh that if he does not let His firstborn go, that He will kill Pharaoh's first born. Later, He calls Israel His wife. He calls us His body, His bride, and His wife. He calls us children; He tells us He is our Father.

Know this; it does not matter how bad you have been or how good you have been, God wants to make you free just because He is blood-related to you.

**Psalm 106:8 says,**

*8 "Nevertheless He saved them for His name's sake, that He might make His mighty power known."*

Satan cannot keep the wife or the bride of God in prison. If you saw your blood relative in prison, and you had the power to release them, would you just stand by and watch them suffer? No!

**What's in a name?**

A name certainly carries more meaning than most Western cultures have understood. Most often in Scripture and in Eastern cultures, a name means more than just an identification tag by which to call a person. A name means the very essence of the person, his/her very character and makeup.

God identifies Himself not only by His character, but also by His blood relations. When a woman marries, her name changes. When two people enter into a blood covenant, both their names change to reflect the other's character and name.

***God said that His ultimate name is "I AM WHO I AM."***

**Exodus 3:13-15 says,**

*13 "Then Moses said to God, 'Indeed, when I come to the children of Israel and say to them, 'The God of your fathers has sent me to you,' and they say to me, 'What is His name?' what shall I say to them?'*

*14 And God said to Moses, 'I AM WHO I AM.' And He said, 'Thus you shall say to the children of Israel, "I AM has sent me to you."'*

*15 Moreover God said to Moses, 'Thus you shall say to the children of Israel: 'The LORD God of your fathers, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob, has sent me to you. This is My name forever, and this is My memorial to all generations.'"*

**The greatest "I AM need" that we have is that of resurrection power.**

That name has so many meanings I would not dare to try to explain it all. However, I do believe that one of its meanings is that God is saying, "I AM what you need Me to be." I believe that that name not only indicates God's sovereignty, which is not limited by time, but also His resurrection power. Our needs in a fallen world require more than simply God sovereignly keeping us from evil and challenges in life. Our most desperate need is to experience God's resurrection power, which turns our challenges, failures and sufferings into blessings. That is the "name" we need the most, the I AM of the resurrection!

We live in a world and on a planet that is racked with sin and death. We have been raised above that. Jesus gave us the command to overcome all the death that we confront in our realm of influence with His resurrection power.

**John 11:25** says,

25 “Jesus said to her, ‘I am the resurrection and the life. He who believes in Me, though he may die, he shall live.’”

***His Name is Resurrection and Life. You are His relative. You have inherited His name and His resurrection power!***

**Revelation 22:4** says,

4 “They shall see His face, and His name shall be on their foreheads.”

**I again ask you the question: How does God defeat His enemies?**

Simply by death and resurrection. A lot of people think that God has some hidden power with which He strikes His enemies whenever He gets mad enough, or if they pray hard enough. Praying is good for sure. However, God defeated Satan by allowing him to see to it that Jesus was crucified so that God could raise Jesus from the dead in supernatural resurrection power. That defeated Satan, because now we have become a new race of humans over which Satan has no legitimate dominion.

***Now for the personal application.***

Since we are related by blood, we also have the resurrection power within us with which we could turn every attack, every challenge, every curse and season of suffering into a blessing. We do that by living the overcoming lifestyle, later described in this chapter as Relationship Skills.

***You have resurrection life in you.***

Not only will He deliver you from “Egyptian slavery,” but also the resurrection life in you will convert those former bondages into blessings. God does not waste our afflictions. He converts them from junk to jewels.

***Does your life seem like it is living death?***

Perhaps God is using the death and resurrection process to free you.

***What is in your hand?***

It is the resurrected Word of God that is near you, even in your mouth (Romans chapter 10).

***Here is a simple way to remember this idea without a lot of trouble.***

In Exodus chapter 7 when Aaron and Moses confronted Pharaoh and his magicians, it seemed as though at first they had equal powers. Aaron threw his rod on the ground and it became a serpent, similar to the practice run that God had with Moses in Exodus chapter 4. Then Pharaoh's magicians threw down their rods and they also became serpents. Look at what happened. Aaron's rod swallowed up their rods. God was in the process of disgracing the Egyptian gods. This was a show of power. No person or "god" has resurrection power other than Jesus.

**Exodus 4:1-5 says,**

*1 "Then Moses answered and said, 'But suppose they will not believe me or listen to my voice; suppose they say, 'The LORD has not appeared to you.'"*

*2 So the LORD said to him, 'What is that in your hand?' He said, 'A rod.'*

*3 And He said, 'Cast it on the ground.' So he cast it on the ground, and it became a serpent; and Moses fled from it.*

*4 Then the LORD said to Moses, 'Reach out your hand and take it by the tail' (and he reached out his hand and caught it, and it became a rod in his hand),*

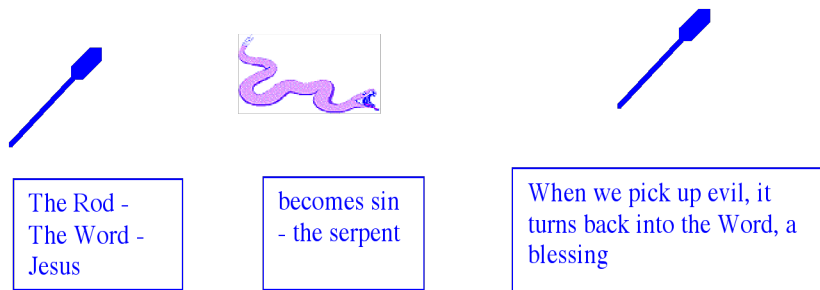
*5 'that they may believe that the LORD God of their fathers, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob, has appeared to you.'"*

*Reproduction, resale or internet posting prohibited*

In Exodus chapter 4, Moses was not sure he had the power to do the task that God had given to him. God told him to throw down the rod that was in his hand. When he did, it turned into a serpent. Then God told him to pick it up again and it turned back into a rod.

***This is the entire message in a nutshell.***

The Rod is the Word. This is indicated in Scripture. The Word is also Jesus who became sin for us on the Cross (the serpent). When Moses picked up the evil serpent, it turned back into the Word or a blessing. Jesus absorbed the evil out of the serpent and made it a blessing through the resurrection. He became your sin, died and was resurrected. Then He gave you His resurrected nature, which gives you the power to turn whatever “death” is in your life into a blessing!



Because of the Cross of Jesus, we can be sure that whatever evil we touch will turn into a blessing. Mark 16:18 says (paraphrased), “and you shall pick up serpents (evil) and they will not hurt you but will turn you into a healer.”

So many times when we see “death” of some kind in our lives, we don’t understand that we have the resurrection power living in us, we have HIS name, Resurrection, to turn that “death” to life and blessing.

When you go through death and resurrection, you are an overcomer. *Overcome* means to win a battle by overpowering the opponent. It means to make the victory final and complete, the supremacy or superiority in battle or war, success in any



contest of struggling in involving the defeat of an opponent or the overcoming of obstacles.

Our victory is Christ's victory over Satan, Revelation 12:11, and when we overcome him in our lives, he goes into bondage. We become free, and he becomes a prisoner. This represents the two sides of the covenant, the Year of Jubilee for you and the Day of Vengeance for Satan (Isaiah 61).

***Job was an overcomer.***

God said that his captivity was turned, or the demons that held him in bondage were now in bondage instead.

**Job 42:10 (KJV) says,**

*10 “And the LORD turned the captivity of Job, when he prayed for his friends: also the LORD gave Job twice as much as he had before.”*

***Light swallows darkness, life swallows death.***

Aaron's snake swallows Pharaoh's snake, truth swallows the lie, and deceit and guile are swallowed by truth and reality. The only way to be free of Satan's slavery is by “dying,” as we will see when the Hebrews went through the Red Sea. When they went through the Sea, Pharaoh was drowned. That was overcoming through death. When Jesus went through the Cross, Satan was defeated. He was defeated in the reality that when Jesus was raised from the dead, He was a new species of being no longer under the dominion of Satan. Death makes us free from Satan because we have resurrection and he does not!

***When you are overcome by temptation, you become a slave.***

However, when you stand with God in His presence and on His Word, you complete and validate the overcoming of the satanic beings in your realm of influence. You make them slaves and you put them into their ultimate slavery.

**2 Peter 2:19 says,**

*19 “While they promise them liberty, they themselves are slaves of corruption; for by whom a person is overcome, by him also he is brought into bondage.”*

**Luke 11:21-22 says,**

*21 “When a strong man, fully armed, guards his own palace, his goods are in peace.*

*22 But when a stronger than he comes upon him and overcomes him, he takes from him all his armor in which he trusted, and divides his spoils.”*

**What is your part in becoming free and experiencing His resurrection power?**

As you most probably have noticed, not everyone who is blood-related to Jesus is free from slavery and bondage. God is not just standing by and allowing you to stay in prison. He is giving you the keys to get out. It is all in the relationship. Therefore if you maintain the relationship in reality, you will be set free in reality. There is a difference between being related to someone and being in relationship with that person. You are related to God if Jesus is your Lord, however, if you do not maintain the relationship, you will not receive the full benefits of being related.

As we will see in later chapters, God was freeing the Hebrews to go into the Wilderness to worship Him and to confirm the blood covenant sacrifice. He was not setting them free in order to have them run amuck and have them live their lives independent of Him. You will notice in later chapters that part of the blood covenant Passover ceremony was the baking of unleavened bread, indicating the absence of sin, and the Israelites were to rise and not wait, to leave Egypt in order to go worship the LORD.

Now that we know that you and God are related, that He hears your cry and feels your pain, that it is His mission to free you from slavery and bondage, that He exchanged His life for yours, that through the blood covenant, the Cross and resurrection He made you a being that is above the world and Satan, that you are no longer subject to being their slave, you need to ask what is your part in making this covenant work.

***Jesus said that you would be free if you maintained the relationship.***

In other words, if you would abide in His Word, you would be His disciple. People who live in the Word, who obey the Word, who allow themselves to be disciplined by Jesus the Word, cannot stay in slavery very long.

***Look at what the Scriptures say about your part in obtaining this freedom.***

**2 Peter 1:2-3 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*2 “May grace (God’s favor) and peace (which is perfect well-being, all necessary good, all spiritual prosperity, and freedom from fears and agitating passions and moral conflicts) be multiplied to you in [the full, personal, precise, and correct] knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord.*

*3 For His divine power has bestowed upon us all things that [are requisite and suited] to life and godliness, through the [full, personal] knowledge of Him Who called us by and to His own glory and excellence (virtue).”*

Notice in the Scripture above, it says that we have all this freedom and all these blessings through “knowing God,” or in proportion to the depth of our relationship with Him.

**John 8:31-37 says,**

*31 “Then Jesus said to those Jews who believed Him, ‘If you abide in My word, you are My disciples indeed.*

*32 And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.’*

*33 They answered Him, ‘We are Abraham’s descendants, and have never been in bondage to anyone. How can you say, ‘You will be made free?’*

*34 Jesus answered them, ‘Most assuredly, I say to you, whoever commits sin is a slave of sin.*

*35 And a slave does not abide in the house forever, but a son abides forever.*

*36 Therefore if the Son makes you free, you shall be free indeed.*

*37 I know that you are Abraham's descendants, but you seek to kill Me, because My word has no place in you.'"*

**It is all about the relationship.**

Freedom comes to us through the blood covenant, through what Jesus did for us. Freedom is the beginning phase of His work in us, His mission towards us. He makes us free people because of the family relationship, the name, as we have discussed.

However, an individual can appropriate as much or as little of that name, that freedom as he/she desires. It is all about the relationship. Jesus said in John 15 that if we abide in His word, and abide in Him by constant obedience to Him, that we would be fruitful branches. This is real. We can truly be connected, but it takes relationship skills on our part. When you keep the relationship strong, you keep His Name strong in you, and the blood covenant becomes manifested not just legally, but experientially. John 15 makes it very clear, that our responsibility is simply to maintain the relationship with Jesus, and then His resurrection power would do the rest. His "vine sap" would flow into you, His branch, and you would be whole. Jesus described relationship like that of a child, who not only passionately needed the parent relationship to stay strong, but also knew his place, putting respect and obedience first.

***God said that He exalted His Word above His name.***

Actually, His Word is His Name. Living in His Word, living in the truth with Him, in daily and hourly contact with Him and His Word, will increase His influence in our lives and will consistently decrease the enemy's influence. Being a Word-conscious person will change us from a death-minded person (carnal) to a life-minded person (spiritual) (Romans 8).

**Psalm 138:2 says,**

*2 "I will worship toward Your holy temple, and praise Your name for Your lovingkindness and Your truth; for You have magnified Your word above all Your name."*

### **Relationship Disciplines and Skills.**

(Also included in Appendix A).

The following are seven important relationship disciplines and skills that we can practice to keep in close intimacy with the Lord. We covered this in previous chapters and we have it in *Appendix A*, however, here we are amplifying them with more detail. For a complete teaching on this subject you may study “The Flowing River” lesson available at [www.isobible.org/flowingriver.htm](http://www.isobible.org/flowingriver.htm).

**1. It is your choice. Make a firm decision to pursue the relationship.** Offer yourself completely to God. Read Romans 12:1-2. This is our blood covenant response to a mighty blood covenant offered to us by God. Take up your cross, or in other words, your “burnt offering.”

**2. We need first to take time to talk to God.** Our first line of talking should be our true gut-level honesty. It should be at the Cross, dumping our sins, carnality, and all our feelings and emotions on Him. In the last chapter, we looked at several different types of slavery. You can only be free if you admit your bondage and call it your enemy. Only truth can make you free.

In the First Epistle to the Corinthians Paul says that we now keep the Passover by unadulterated honesty and truth. The Hebrews needed to pack their bags and rush out of Egypt, which is to say that we need to turn our back on the things of this world.

**1 Corinthians 5:7-8 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*7 “Purge (clean out) the old leaven that you may be fresh (new) dough, still uncontaminated [as you are], for Christ, our Passover [Lamb], has been sacrificed.*

*8 Therefore, let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, nor with leaven of vice and malice and wickedness, but with the unleavened [bread] of purity (nobility, honor) and sincerity and [unadulterated] truth.”*

***We need to apply the Passover blood just as the Hebrews did.***

In this time of truth, make sure you forgive as well as be forgiven. You will never be free without forgiveness going in both directions!

**3. Thanksgiving.**

**Psalm 100:4 says,**

*4 “Enter into His gates with thanksgiving, and into His courts with praise. Be thankful to Him, and bless His name.”*

Times of worship through thanksgiving is important, as the Holy Spirit loves to make Himself real during these times. We do indeed enter into a place closer to the Holy of Holies, or the very manifest presence of God, when we enter with thanksgiving. I can give thanks for the good things very easily, but I believe that the Lord is deeply touched when we show Him that we do not take those good things for granted.

I can give thanks in the midst of difficult and challenging times because I know that I have the victory as I overcome and turn these challenges into a blessing.

**4. We need to take time to listen.** We need to be in daily Bible studies and/or readings. Teaching through various audio and media materials from trusted ministers can be very valuable. One of my favorites is Dr. Mark Rutland. We need to surround our minds and hearts with hearing the Word in as many ways as possible. When I first met Jesus, I would spend five or so hours a day in the Word. It had a profound impact on my life and delivered me from so many bondages, impossible circumstances, and demons that they are too numerous to list. I did not know what the bondages were or that I was even in bondage. As I would soak in the Word, obey Him, and consistently turn from sin, as He would show me, the chains would fall off by the multitudes.

***The Word is supernatural.***

It is alive and active. It is a seed that will bear fruit for you and for God’s glory. The more time you spend in the Word the

more prosperous your soul will be, and that will bring every type of prosperity!

**5. Then you again need to take time to speak.** However, this time you need to speak His Word, the Word upon which you have been meditating. When you meditate upon the Word and then speak it out, it is powerful. You hear it, God hears it, and Satan hears it. When Satan hears it, he does not see you, he sees only Jesus, the Word, who conquered him.

***Jesus is the High Priest over our confessions.*** When the Word of God is confessed and prayed over a person or a situation, it is powerful! Jesus created everything by His Word. Jesus IS the Word. Jesus gave us the authority to use the Word as if it were He saying it!

**John 1:1-3 says,**

*1 “In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.*

*2 He was in the beginning with God.*

*3 All things were made through Him, and without Him nothing was made that was made.”*

When the Passover was administered to Israel in Exodus 12, the Israelites were told to put the blood of an innocent lamb over their doors and the death angel (demon) would “pass over” and not hurt them. Jesus is the Lamb of God, and we can put His blood over our doors and over the doors of our loved ones and those that we pray for. How?

***The words of our mouth will apply the blood.*** Notice in Exodus 12 that as long as the lamb’s blood stayed in the basin, it did no good. But when they took the hyssop, dipped it in the blood and applied to their doors, then God and the devil could see it. The hyssop was a common weed, which did not seem to have much value. The words of our mouth do not seem to have much value, but when we dip them into the Word of God (Who is Jesus Himself) and apply them as blood, God sees it and the devil sees it!

Jesus takes our confession and makes it powerful.

When we speak God’s Word, Jesus takes it to the Father and asks Him to perform it.

**Hebrews 3:1 says,**

*1 “Therefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the Apostle and High Priest of our confession, Christ Jesus.”*

**Then, we can enter into rest and let the Word do the work.**

**Hebrews 4:1 says,**

*1 “Therefore, since a promise remains of entering His rest, let us fear lest any of you seem to have come short of it.”*

His work was finished from the foundation of the earth, therefore we can believe.

**Hebrews 4:3 (KJV) says,**

*3 “For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.”*

**Hebrews 4:12 says,**

*12 “For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.”*

**Angels go to work** when they hear God’s Word.

**Psalm 103:20 says,**

*20 “Bless the LORD, you His angels, who excel in strength, who do His word, heeding the voice of His word.”*

**Demons flee!**

**Psalm 149:5-9 says,**

*5 “Let the saints be joyful in glory; let them sing aloud on their beds.*

*6 Let the high praises of God be in their mouth, and a two-edged sword in their hand,*



*7 to execute vengeance on the nations, and punishments on the peoples (representing our spiritual enemies);*

*8 to bind their kings with chains, and their nobles with fetters of iron;*

*9 to execute on them the written judgment – this honor have all His saints. Praise the LORD!”*

**5. Obey God.** Ask God to give you something simple, something small every day that you may obey. This is a big thing! John 14:21-23.

**6. Communion.** Take communion on a regular basis. Many people take it daily.

**7. Stay in fellowship.** It is important to be in fellowship with strong Bible-believing, Spirit-filled believers, for refreshing and encouragement.

**Keep your relationship alive and well, especially when you do not feel like it.**

*Reproduction, resale or internet posting prohibited*

## Chapter 15

### Storms in your life? Apply the Passover blood!

**“You caused judgment to be heard from heaven; The earth feared and was still” (Psalm 76:8).**

This world is rocking with tribulation right now. Many people say that they are still waiting for the great tribulation. Maybe they are correct. But try to tell that to a person in Haiti who is standing on top of a rooftop amid a flood that has washed away his family and belongings. Tell that to the mother there who sees her dead children floating around her ankles, and whose daughter’s limbs are being amputated due to a total breakdown in hygiene. Tell that to the pastor in jail in Africa who sees one in his congregation brought to his jail cell, each day, and beaten to death in front of him until he denies Jesus. Tell that to the single mom in America who is trying to make ends meet because of a backslidden and deserting husband. That is *their* great tribulation.

It seems to be continually getting worse. Peeking into the Books of Exodus and Revelation can give us some hints on why it is happening. Both Books show that judgments are coming upon the god of this world. They are parallel. In Exodus there are ten judgments, in Revelation – seven. Ten is the number for the government of man, and seven is the number for God’s perfection. In both cases, the judgments are to give God’s people their freedom and inheritance and to take vengeance on the gods of the world. This is God’s way. Isaiah 61, Jesus’ mission statement, makes it clear that the Year of Jubilee, wherein the slaves were set free, goes along with the Day of Vengeance. Also, see this parallel in Leviticus 25 and 26. The same judgment that puts vengeance on your spiritual enemies brings God’s purpose to your life.

**The Blood Covenant works like this.**

God brings His purposes to us and to His enemies through judgments. Judgments manifest themselves as storms in our lives. Read Matthew chapter 24 to confirm this. Judgments (storms) bring, and are intended to bring, deliverance to the oppressed, to those who are covered by the blood. However, to those who are not covered by the blood, including the gods of the

world and those who trust in them, the vengeance of the covenant comes upon them. This is the pattern of what happened in Egypt during the Exodus, and it is the pattern for us in our lives today.

Plagues, trouble, and tribulation always seem like they are going to kill us. Backslidden spouses, sickness, divorce, financial problems, war, terrorism and the like all seem like they are going to overwhelm us. However, if we know the truth, we can receive God's blessings in the storms.

What is the truth? Judgments are God's way to bring us our inheritance and to defeat our enemies. If we know this, then we can have the presence of mind to apply the Passover blood, as the Hebrews did, and overcome so we can become free people.

Notice that the Hebrews were protected from the plagues that hit Egypt. They were in Goshen, a suburb, and the plagues did not affect them there. There are some conflicting opinions, however. Some say that the Hebrews did indeed experience the first three plagues because God's promise to protect them was not until just before the fourth plague. I do not have an opinion, expect that I am pretty sure that they felt the terror of them. In Hebrew, Goshen means to draw near.

***I am sure that the Israelites had fear and trembling during the judgments on Egypt.***

We certainly see our tribulations as something to fear, but we need to see them as God at work giving us our inheritance, and giving Satan his inheritance as well.

The Hebrews had their other gods; therefore they were also subject to God's judgment. The blood saved them. Pure grace! He remembered His covenant. The blood on the doorposts was a sign that said, "The judgment has already taken place here."

God's entire wrath was put on Jesus in accordance with His blood covenant with Abraham. This is the Passover message! You and I deserved the entire judgment of God. Instead, Jesus stepped into the blood covenant ditch with Abram and promised to take his and his descendants' sin nature so that the judgment would come upon Him instead of you and me. All of the effects of your rejection, abuse, shame and poor self-esteem issues have been borne by Jesus.

The storms, plagues, and tribulations of life cannot hurt us. We used to be people subject to God’s wrath and Satan’s attacks. However, now we are New Creations in Christ, a new race of people. The blood covenant has changed us.

**The Book of Revelation is parallel to Exodus in many ways. Consider the Lamb.**

**Revelation 5:6** says,

6 “And I looked, and behold, in the midst of the throne and of the four living creatures, and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb as though it had been slain.”

**Believers are sealed and protected.**

**Revelation 7:3** says,

3 “Saying, ‘Do not harm the earth, the sea, or the trees till we have sealed the servants of our God on their foreheads.’”

**The “world system” is destroyed.**

**Revelation 16:17-20** says,

17 “Then the seventh angel poured out his bowl into the air, and a loud voice came out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, ‘It is done!’

18 And there were noises and thunderings and lightnings; and there was a great earthquake, such a mighty and great earthquake as had not occurred since men were on the earth.

19 Now the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell. And great Babylon was remembered before God, to give her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of His wrath.

20 Then every island fled away, and the mountains were not found.”

**Believers become part of Jesus’ army.**

**Revelation 19:11-14** says,

11 “Now I saw heaven opened, and behold, a white horse. And He who sat on him was called

*Faithful and True, and in righteousness He judges and makes war.*

*12 His eyes were like a flame of fire, and on His head were many crowns. He had a name written that no one knew except Himself.*

*13 He was clothed with a robe dipped in blood, and His name is called The Word of God.*

*14 And the armies in heaven, clothed in fine linen, white and clean, followed Him on white horses.”*

**Ministry takes place after the overcoming.**

**Revelation 22:1-5 says,**

*1 “And he showed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding from the throne of God and of the Lamb.*

*2 In the middle of its street, and on either side of the river, was the tree of life, which bore twelve fruits, each tree yielding its fruit every month. The leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.*

*3 And there shall be no more curse, but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it, and His servants shall serve Him.*

*4 They shall see His face, and His name shall be on their foreheads.*

*5 There shall be no night there: They need no lamp nor light of the sun, for the Lord God gives them light, and they shall reign forever and ever.”*

**Apply the blood!**

Keep your relationship skills sharp with God as we have described in previous chapters and in Appendix A. Know who you are in Christ. Live out your life in accordance with this knowledge. Use the Word of God against Satan, and keep the Passover with “unadulterated purity and honesty.”

As you read these Scriptures in Exodus 11-15, put yourself in the shoes of one who had a slavery mindset for many years. See the blood of the Lamb delivering you from your bondage to the world. See Jesus as the Lamb. See Satan’s position in this drama as Pharaoh. Also, put yourself into the shoes of the

Israelites after their deliverance from Egypt, a type of your being delivered.

See God's power and persistent mission to free you. See the Hebrews' obedience to carry out the Passover ritual, the blood covenant. Then see Pharaoh's impotence in trying to stop their deliverance. Also notice the opportunities the Hebrews had for fear, doubt, and giving up!

Then ponder the fate of all of the Israelites in the Wilderness. Except for Joshua and Caleb, they all died in the Wilderness without inheriting the Promise Land.

Perhaps Satan learned a lesson from the Exodus. Perhaps he learned that he needs to deceive believers to think that storms and tribulation in their lives are for their destruction and that God is somehow either mad at them or that He does not care.

The attributes of Joshua and Caleb that we may use as a model and lesson for inheriting our promises are that they are the only ones who stayed in constant fellowship with God. That caused them to hear Him, which caused faith, which led to humility and obedience, which always leads to a greater vision of His Face and more revelation in His Word, which compounds this cycle over and over. (References: Exodus 33:11, Numbers 13:30, 14:24, 14:30, 14:38, 32:12).

### **One more plague, the Passover.**

#### **Exodus 11:1-10 says,**

*1 "And the LORD said to Moses, 'I will bring yet one more plague on Pharaoh and on Egypt. Afterward he will let you go from here. When he lets you go, he will surely drive you out of here altogether.*

*2 Speak now in the hearing of the people, and let every man ask from his neighbor and every woman from her neighbor, articles of silver and articles of gold.'*

*3 And the LORD gave the people favor in the sight of the Egyptians. Moreover the man Moses was very great in the land of Egypt, in the sight of Pharaoh's servants and in the sight of the people.*

*4 Then Moses said, “Thus says the LORD: ‘About midnight I will go out into the midst of Egypt;*

*5 and all the firstborn in the land of Egypt shall die, from the firstborn of Pharaoh who sits on his throne, even to the firstborn of the female servant who is behind the handmill, and all the firstborn of the animals.*

*6 Then there shall be a great cry throughout all the land of Egypt, such as was not like it before, nor shall be like it again.*

*7 But against none of the children of Israel shall a dog move its tongue, against man or beast, that you may know that the LORD does make a difference between the Egyptians and Israel.’*

*8 And all these your servants shall come down to me and bow down to me, saying, ‘Get out, and all the people who follow you!’ After that I will go out.” Then he went out from Pharaoh in great anger.*

*9 But the LORD said to Moses, ‘Pharaoh will not heed you, so that My wonders may be multiplied in the land of Egypt.’*

*10 So Moses and Aaron did all these wonders before Pharaoh; and the LORD hardened Pharaoh’s heart, and he did not let the children of Israel go out of his land.”*

God told Moses to instruct every Hebrew family to take a lamb, without blemish, and slay it. Then they were instructed to take the blood of the lamb and put it on their doors, over the two side posts and on the lintel above. They were to dip the hyssop plant into the blood and use this for spreading on the door. After that they were to roast and eat the lamb, with unleavened bread and bitter herbs.

**Exodus 12:12-13 says,**

*12 “For I will pass through the land of Egypt on that night, and will strike all the firstborn in the land of Egypt, both man and beast; and against all the gods of Egypt I will execute judgment: I am the LORD.*

*13 Now the blood shall be a sign for you on the houses where you are. And when I see the blood, I will pass over you; and the plague shall not be on you to destroy you when I strike the land of Egypt.”*

It is interesting to note that we have a New Testament parallel to this idea of obeying the command of no leaven.

**1 Corinthians 5:8 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*8 “Therefore, let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, nor with leaven of vice and malice and wickedness, but with the unleavened [bread] of purity (nobility, honor) and sincerity and [unadulterated] truth.”*

**Exodus 12:20-22 says,**

*20 “You shall eat nothing leavened; in all your dwellings you shall eat unleavened bread.’*

*21 Then Moses called for all the elders of Israel and said to them, ‘Pick out and take lambs for yourselves according to your families, and kill the Passover lamb.*

*22 And you shall take a bunch of hyssop, dip it in the blood that is in the basin, and strike the lintel and the two doorposts with the blood that is in the basin. And none of you shall go out of the door of his house until morning.’”*

I believe that we “take the blood out of the basin and apply it with hyssop” when we speak the Word that God has given to us in our own particular situation.

**Exodus 12:23 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*23 “For the Lord will pass through to slay the Egyptians; and when He sees the blood upon the lintel and the two side posts, the Lord will pass over the door and will not allow the destroyer to come into your houses to slay you.”*



**Exodus 12:30-38 says,**

30 “So Pharaoh rose in the night, he, all his servants, and all the Egyptians; and there was a great cry in Egypt, for there was not a house where there was not one dead.

31 Then he called for Moses and Aaron by night, and said, ‘Rise, go out from among my people, both you and the children of Israel. And go, serve the LORD as you have said.

32 Also take your flocks and your herds, as you have said, and be gone; and bless me also.’

33 And the Egyptians urged the people, that they might send them out of the land in haste. For they said, ‘We shall all be dead.’

34 So the people took their dough before it was leavened, having their kneading bowls bound up in their clothes on their shoulders.

35 Now the children of Israel had done according to the word of Moses, and they had asked from the Egyptians articles of silver, articles of gold, and clothing.

36 And the LORD had given the people favor in the sight of the Egyptians, so that they granted them what they requested. Thus they plundered the Egyptians.

37 Then the children of Israel journeyed from Rameses to Succoth, about six hundred thousand men on foot, besides children.

38 A mixed multitude went up with them also, and flocks and herds – a great deal of livestock.”

I believe that the *mixed multitude* represented those Egyptians who had believed in the God of Israel. The Lord required that this mixed multitude, however, be circumcised.

**The Israelites began their march out of Egypt.**

Exodus 14 reports that God told Moses to make the exodus and to take the people and camp at a place called Pi Hahiroth which was opposite the Red Sea. This was really a detour from their

original route and was certainly not the shortest route out of Egypt. But God knew that Pharaoh would change his mind again and pursue them, and He knew this unusual route would be for Pharaoh's defeat.

Pharaoh did pursue with vengeance, with 600 chosen chariots and all the other chariots of Egypt. The Israelites saw them and were exceedingly frightened. They complained to Moses saying, "Is it because there are no graves in Egypt that you have taken us away to die in the wilderness? Why have you treated us this way and brought us out of Egypt?" (Exodus 14:9-11).

In Exodus 14:13, Moses told the people, "Fear not; stand still (firm, confident, undismayed) and see the salvation of the Lord, which He will work for you today. For the Egyptians you have seen today you shall never see again."

The Angel of God went before the host of Israel, and behind them, with a pillar of cloud behind and before them. This cloud gave darkness to the Egyptians but light to the Israelites.

God told Moses to lift up his rod and stretch out his hand over the sea. When Moses did that, the sea was divided and became a dry land. The Israelites walked across the sea on dry ground and the waters were like a wall on their left and right sides.

Egyptians pursued the Israelites and went into the midst of the sea as well. Moses, a second time, stretched out his hand and rod over the sea, and the sea went back and drowned all of Pharaoh's army, as they became bogged down in the mud. Now that is a miracle, dry land for the Israelites, but mud for the Egyptians! (Exodus 14:15-30).

### **Delivered and praising God.**

When the Israelites reached the other side and saw their enemies destroyed, they began to sing, what we call "The Song of Moses."

**Exodus 15:1-21 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*1 "THEN MOSES and the Israelites sang this song to the Lord, saying, I will sing to the Lord, for He has triumphed gloriously; the horse and his rider or its chariot has He thrown into the sea.*

*2 The Lord is my Strength and my Song, and He has become my Salvation; this is my God, and I will praise Him, my father's God, and I will exalt Him.*

*3 The Lord is a Man of War; the Lord is His name.*

*4 Pharaoh's chariots and his host has He cast into the sea; his chosen captains also are sunk in the Red Sea.*

*5 The floods cover them; they sank in the depths [clad in mail] like a stone.*

*6 Your right hand, O Lord, is glorious in power; Your right hand, O Lord, shatters the enemy.*

*7 In the greatness of Your majesty You overthrow those rising against You. You send forth Your fury; it consumes them like stubble.*

*8 With the blast of Your nostrils the waters piled up, the floods stood fixed in a heap, the deeps congealed in the heart of the sea.*

*9 The enemy said, I will pursue, I will overtake, I will divide the spoil; my desire shall be satisfied upon them; I will draw my sword, my hand shall destroy them.*

*10 You [Lord] blew with Your wind, the sea covered them; [clad in mail] they sank as lead in the mighty waters.*

*11 Who is like You, O Lord, among the gods? Who is like You, glorious in holiness, awesome in splendor, doing wonders?*

*12 You stretched out Your right hand, the earth's [sea] swallowed them.*

*13 You in Your mercy and loving-kindness have led forth the people whom You have redeemed; You have guided them in Your strength to Your holy habitation.*

***14 The peoples have heard of it; they tremble; pangs have taken hold on the inhabitants of Philistia.***

***15 Now the chiefs of Edom are dismayed; the mighty men of Moab [renowned for strength],***

*trembling takes hold of them; all the inhabitants of Canaan have melted away – little by little.*

*16 Terror and dread fall upon them; because of the greatness of Your arm they are as still as a stone – till Your people pass by and over [into Canaan], O Lord, till the people pass by whom You have purchased.*

*17 You will bring them in [to the land] and plant them on Your own mountain, the place, O Lord, You have made for Your dwelling, the sanctuary, O Lord, which Your hands have established.*

*18 The Lord will reign forever and ever.*

*19 For the horses of Pharaoh went with his chariots and horsemen into the sea, and the Lord brought back the waters of the sea upon them, but the Israelites walked on dry ground in the midst of the sea.*

*20 Then Miriam the prophetess, the sister of Aaron, took a timbrel in her hand, and all the women went out after her with timbrels and dancing.*

*21 And Miriam responded to them, Sing to the Lord, for He has triumphed gloriously and is highly exalted; the horse and his rider He has thrown into the sea.”*

Notice the very interesting fact that Philistia, Edom, and Canaan were also affected by what God put Pharaoh through. That goes along with the idea that when we overcome, we have no idea how far the spiritual judgment reaches. The demons and curses are defeated by our overcoming, and it sets others free as well. This is one way God issues judgment.

**Luke 11:21-22 says,**

*21 “When a strong man, fully armed, guards his own palace, his goods are in peace.*

*22 But when a stronger than he comes upon him and overcomes him, he takes from him all his armor in which he trusted, and divides his spoils.”*

**See the storms in your life as your gift of deliverance from God, not as your enemy who has come to destroy you.**

See your storms as your friends! See judgment in your storms. Judgments are for your benefit, giving you God's inheritance. Judgments are for Satan's defeat, giving those demonic beings in your realm of influence the defeat of the Passover.

**We want Kingdom power, and Jesus promised it.**

However, Jesus did not supply us the power in the way we expected. Surprise! We get the power the same way He did, through death and resurrection.

**Power is in death and resurrection.**

**Acts 1:5-8 says,**

5 *“for John truly baptized with water, but you shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit not many days from now.”*

6 *Therefore, when they had come together, they asked Him, saying, “Lord, will You at this time restore the kingdom to Israel?” [LOOKING FOR POWER WITH EARTHLY THRONES].*

7 *And He said to them, ‘It is not for you to know times or seasons which the Father has put in His own authority.*

8 *But you shall receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you; and you shall be witnesses {martyrs - martyr} [MEANING TO GO THROUGH THE OVERCOMING PROCESS IN AFFLICITON] to Me in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the end of the earth.*

*Reproduction, scaling or internet posting prohibited*

**Chapter 16**  
**Who Is Your Uncircumcised Philistine?**  
The war for your thought life.



David referred to Goliath as an uncircumcised Philistine.

**1 Samuel 17:36** says,  
36 “Your servant has killed both lion and bear; and this uncircumcised Philistine will be like one of them,

*seeing he has defied the armies of the living God.”*

**The term *uncircumcised* indicates a lack of blood covenant with God.**

As we study this event involving David and Goliath and relate it to the blood covenant, we will focus on one of our primary “uncircumcised enemies,” our thoughts. As you study this story, notice that Goliath was throwing “thought bombs” at the Israelites. He was producing fear and intimidation, while all the Israel was in blood covenant with God. God was their warrior, but they took Goliath’s words and believed them.

One of the biggest struggles in our walk with the Lord is overcoming false thought and belief systems. In our old nature our minds controlled us. Now in our regenerated nature, our spirits are to be in control. We are to take our thoughts captive to the truth.

However, so often we succumb to our old unregenerated thoughts and often speak them. We hear a false thought message, receive it as truth, welcome the resulting emotion, and act upon it. Then our act becomes a habit, and eventually, our habit becomes a satanic stronghold. Soon we have become prisoners to the enemy.

Also, science has shown that negative thoughts and negative emotions cause our minds to excrete harmful chemicals that affect our bodies, souls, and our spiritual life.

**Our thought life can be the tool of the enemy.**

In the last chapter we saw how the blood covenant dealt with storms and troubles coming with circumstances. Now we are going to see the blood covenant in action from another door that the enemy uses, perhaps the biggest one, our thoughts.

**2 Corinthians 10:3-6 (Amplified Bible) says,**

3 *“For though we walk (live) in the flesh, we are not carrying on our warfare according to the flesh and using mere human weapons.*

4 *For the weapons of our warfare are not physical [weapons of flesh and blood], but they are mighty before God for the overthrow and destruction of strongholds,*

5 *[Inasmuch as we] refute arguments and theories and reasonings and every proud and lofty thing [high thing] that sets itself up against the [true] knowledge of God; and we lead every thought and purpose away captive into the obedience of Christ (the Messiah, the Anointed One) [The Word],*

6 *Being in readiness to punish every [insubordinate for his] disobedience, when your own submission and obedience [as a church] are fully secured and complete.”*

Notice in the above Scripture, the weapons are to war against inordinate thoughts. Also notice that this Scripture refers to *arguments* which are imaginations and reasonings; they are thoughts that we obtain. It also refers to strongholds, which are thoughts that have become demonic fortresses. So many of these arguments and strongholds can be a result of our past life. But also notice that this Scripture refers to *high things*. *High things* are thoughts that have been originated by satanic beings, they are fiery darts aimed at our minds. The enemy wants us to take the

thought, act upon it until it becomes a habit, and then he sits back until he can make it a stronghold.

Ephesians chapter 6 explains the idea of *high things*.

**Ephesians 6:11-12 (KJV) says,**

11 “Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil.

12 For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.”

***A stronghold is a fortress of false knowledge that is believed on as truth.***

I believe that the primary evidence and function of a stronghold in a person’s life is that when a certain thought or event takes place related to that stronghold, that the person’s stronghold short-circuits the will and rational thinking, and causes an irrational reaction immediately before the person can even make a choice. It is like a “knee jerk” reaction, almost involuntary. I have seen Christians (and of course, others) who actually could tell a lie and still pass a lie detector test. Their stronghold of deceit and lying had them believing their own lie, 2 Thessalonians 2:11. Anger is a very common stronghold.

**The weapons referred to in 2 Corinthians 10 are weapons that are intended to protect our covenant rights of our “knowing” Him.**

Notice in the Scripture quoted above from 2 Corinthians 10 that this warfare is against knowing God, or being intimate with Him, “[T]hat sets itself up against the [true] knowledge of God” (v.5).

***Knowing God is everything.***

*Knowing* is a word that suggests the most intimate personal contact, more than intellectual knowledge, a close personal knowing. It includes the ability to hear God’s voice on a regular basis. But we are in a war for that. The war is in and for our mind. Our greatest task is taking our thoughts captive with the weapons God has given us.



Jesus has already defeated Satan at the Cross. He has already given us a complete blood covenant, which includes our rights to know Him. Our war is not to defeat Satan or to gain our rights to be close to God, but simply to defend what our rightful inheritance is. Furthermore, Jesus is the mediator of the blood covenant. He is there to make sure that we receive the blood covenant privileges.

If you are disconnected from *knowing* God, you live as a mere Gentile in the futility of your mind. You can nullify everything He wants to give you in and through His intimacy. Your life will be a futile as an unsaved person.

**Ephesians 4:17 says,**

*17 “This I say, therefore, and testify in the Lord, that you should no longer walk as the rest of the Gentiles walk, in the futility of their mind.”*

**Ephesians 4:23 says,**

*23 “and be renewed in the spirit of your mind.”*

When you are *knowing* Jesus, present tense, you make Him alive here on earth and the devil’s plans are thwarted. But if the devil can get control of your thoughts you will not know Jesus, and the devil’s plans can succeed. Remember Jesus said to some in Matthew 7:23, “I never knew you.”

Please know that I am not attempting to minimize the mercy and grace of God, the finished work of Jesus at the Cross by suggesting some sort of salvation by works program or legalism. I am not suggesting that God is sitting back to watch how well we perform. No! He did it all. However, He also warned us that we would have to overcome, which is a term used in warfare. Our new birth is free. But our staying plugged into the life of God allows Him to make us whole, to use us for His glory and to bring His Kingdom purposes to this earth. That staying plugged in is the warfare needed to keep our thought life plugged into His Word and to resist Satan’s thought bombs. Satan’s task is to take over our thoughts so that he can unplug us from God’s life.

***Knowing Him! The New Blood Covenant is about knowing Him.***

The removal of sin is what allows us to know Him. Jeremiah prophesied it.

**Jeremiah 24:7** says,

*7 “Then I will give them a heart to know Me, that I am the LORD; and they shall be My people, and I will be their God, for they shall return to Me with their whole heart.”*

**Jeremiah 31:34** says,

*34 “No more shall every man teach his neighbor, and every man his brother, saying, ‘Know the LORD,’ for they all shall know Me, from the least of them to the greatest of them, says the LORD. For I will forgive their iniquity, and their sin I will remember no more.”*

**It is confirmed in the New Testament.**

**Hebrews 8:6-12** says,

*6 “But now He has obtained a more excellent ministry, inasmuch as He is also Mediator of a better covenant, which was established on better promises.*

*7 For if that first covenant had been faultless, then no place would have been sought for a second.*

*8 Because finding fault with them, He says: ‘Behold, the days are coming, says the LORD, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah –*

*9 not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt; because they did not continue in My covenant, and I disregarded them, says the LORD.*

*10 For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, says the LORD: I will put My laws in their mind and write them on their hearts; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people.*

*11 None of them shall teach his neighbor, and none his brother, saying, 'Know the LORD,' for all shall know Me, from the least of them to the greatest of them.*

*12 For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their lawless deeds I will remember no more.'"*

***Paul prayed that the church would know and experience God.***

**Ephesians 3:16- 20 (Amplified Bible) says;**

*16 "May He grant you out of the rich treasury of His glory to be strengthened and reinforced with mighty power in the inner man by the [Holy] Spirit [Himself indwelling your innermost being and personality].*

*17 May Christ through your faith [actually] dwell (settle down, abide, make His permanent home) in your hearts! May you be rooted deep in love and founded securely on love,*

*18 That you may have the power and be strong to apprehend and grasp with all the saints [God's devoted people, the experience of that love] what is the breadth and length and height and depth [of it];*

*19 [That you may really come] to know [practically, through experience for yourselves] the love of Christ, which far surpasses mere knowledge [without experience]; that you may be filled [through all your being] unto all the fullness of God [may have the richest measure of the divine Presence, and become a body wholly filled and flooded with God Himself]!*

*20 Now to Him Who, by (in consequence of) the [action of His] power that is at work within us, is able to [carry out His purpose and] do superabundantly, far over and above all that we [dare] ask or think [infinitely beyond our highest prayers, desires, thoughts, hopes, or dreams]."*

**Examples of damaging thoughts.**

We can receive thoughts against the true character of God, against our true identity in Christ, and against others. This is exactly the opposite of Jesus' command, which says we are to love the Lord our God with all of our mind, our thoughts.

**Matthew 22:37-38** says,

37 *“Jesus said to him, ‘You shall love the LORD your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind.’*

38 *This is the first and great commandment.’”*

***Satan shoots thought bombs at us, which lie about the character of God, and against who we are in Christ.***

Satan's thoughts often bring worry and fear, both of which cut off our knowing God. Perhaps some thoughts such as these will come.

*“Shame on you, you are not good enough for God to move on your behalf. You have been too bad.”*

*“God is too busy for you, you will have to make this one on your own.”*

*“Did God really mean that ‘By His stripes you were healed?’”*

*“It is okay, God understands your ungodly habit. He understands your heart, so it is okay just to keep on and not repent.”*

*“This problem is just too big for me, and I cannot visualize God solving it.”*

*“I can never be as good as those other people, I can never succeed like they do.”*

*“Others can hear God speak, but I cannot.”*

*“There is no way I can obey what the Bible says about my money and spending time in the Word.”*

These are just a few. You need to judge your thoughts by the Word of God. Remember, Satan inspired Eve to take his thoughts and doubt the Word of God.

**The seed of negative thoughts often can come from a broken past.**

Anger, fear, shame, rejection, poor self-esteem, helplessness, hopelessness, discouragement, and loneliness can all produce and/or be the result of negative belief systems, emotions, actions, and strongholds. Many times we fall into these negative belief systems due to dysfunctional and/or broken relationships in our lives. If you have come from a family or a lifestyle that has had broken relationships, especially with the father, and/or if your forefathers have experienced broken relationships and have lived an ungodly life, then your belief system will default to “wrong” until your mind is renewed.

With this cycle we never really enjoy what God has for us. We do not glorify God, nor do we produce fruit for His Kingdom. Worse yet, if we do not “slay” these negative thoughts and seeds passed down to us, they can be our “Achilles’ heel.”

***Potential for tragedy. Look at Solomon.***

David’s son Solomon was called the wisest man. Certainly he was one of the wealthiest. God gave him the greatest wisdom. He wrote the Proverbs. Yet, because he would not deal with his thoughts of being unloved, he had over 1,000 wives and concubines, most of whom were idol worshippers. They caused him to worship the gods of Satan.

Dr. Mark Rutland, in one of his teachings, called this a true tragedy. He used the definition of “tragedy” as one who falls from a high and lofty position unnecessarily. You are actually higher and loftier than Solomon because you are of the new creation race. Solomon was looking for love in the wrong places. Dr. Rutland stated that he did not believe that Solomon was lustful, but he was somehow hungry for love.

Many people attempt to “medicate” these feelings and emotions with the wrong prescription as Solomon did. Most often these are caused by some broken connection in your past. Perhaps they are caused by a bad or a non-existing relationship with your father. Maybe you have suffered rejection from loved ones or peers. It could even be from a generational curse coming

down your family line that is just now popping its head up and you cannot figure out what happened!

**How do we deal with negative and destructive thought patterns within the blood covenant?**

Most of us have heard the story of David and Goliath. Let us look at it again from the point of view of deliverance from our bondages that result from an undisciplined thought life.

Israel had been disobedient to God on an “on and off” basis. Saul was king. The Philistines were intimidating God’s people and they were afraid, even Saul was afraid.

In view of all of this, there was at least one, little David the shepherd, who understood something about the blood. He must have learned, at least in part, about the hand of the covenant God out in the field when he killed the lion and the bear. Most likely, he killed them with his sling and a stone. That is no small feat. However, David had a way of hearing God and responding to Him (Psalm 23, 32, 51). We know that faith comes by hearing God speak. David had faith in the blood covenant with God. Let us take a lesson from David to slay our own Goliaths.

Remember, Israel had a blood covenant with God that promised that He would defeat their enemies. Their false belief system gave Goliath the door to curse them and instill fear.

***David refused to use the arms of the flesh, Saul’s armor.***

Saul represents the old nature, our flesh, our unregenerated “king.” One’s armor also represents a covenant item. When two enter into a blood covenant, they exchange armor. Most often we do not really turn our backs on the strength of our old flesh nature until we see it fail us. But David somehow knew that he already had Other Armor:

**1 Samuel 17:38-39 says,**

*38 “So Saul clothed David with his armor, and he put a bronze helmet on his head; he also clothed him with a coat of mail.*

*39 David fastened his sword to his armor and tried to walk, for he had not tested them. And David said to Saul, ‘I cannot walk with these, for I have not tested them.’ So David took them off.”*

***David refused to be intimidated by Satan, Goliath. He trusted in the Word of God, in the covenant of blood.***

How do we know that? He expressed his faith in the blood when he cried out in 1 Samuel 17:36 said, “Your servant has killed both lion and bear; and this uncircumcised Philistine will be like one of them, seeing he has defied the armies of the living God

I can guarantee you that Satan is active, alive and he is not without his plans to keep you in slavery and bondage! It is real! But look at what David said to Goliath!

**1 Samuel 17:45-47 says,**

*45 “Then David said to the Philistine, ‘You come to me with a sword, with a spear, and with a javelin. But I come to you in the name of the LORD of hosts, the God of the armies of Israel, whom you have defied.*

*46 This day the LORD will deliver you into my hand, and I will strike you and take your head from you. And this day I will give the carcasses of the camp of the Philistines to the birds of the air and the wild beasts of the earth, that all the earth may know that there is a God in Israel.*

*47 Then all this assembly shall know that the LORD does not save with sword and spear; for the battle is the LORD’s, and He will give you into our hands.”*

***David refused to be discouraged by his own family, Eliab his brother.***

People within our families, and even the Body of Christ, may discourage us. These people who should be our cheerleaders, but, due to their own bondages, they attempt to bring us down to their level with discouragement.

**1 Samuel 17:28 says,**

*28 “Now Eliab his oldest brother heard when he spoke to the men; and Eliab’s anger was aroused against David, and he said, ‘Why did you come down*

*here? And with whom have you left those few sheep in the wilderness? I know your pride and the insolence of your heart, for you have come down to see the battle.’”*

***David had the “name” of God.***

He knew that God had given His name in blood covenant to Israel, and David understood the significance (see 1 Samuel 17:45 above). He knew that Goliath the Philistine did not have a covenant with God. The Philistines, in many respects, were better warriors, more cultured and stronger people. But that made no difference to David. He understood the value of the blood exchange, the blood covenant!

***David used five smooth stones and his sling.***

**1 Samuel 17:40 says,**

*40 “Then he took his staff in his hand; and he chose for himself five smooth stones...”*

***Five is the number for grace.***

Rocks and stones often refer to the Word. The Word of grace perhaps represents David’s choice of five smooth stones. Christ is metaphorically often referred to as the Stone or the Rock.

**Acts 20:32 (KJV) says,**

*32 “And now, brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you up and to give you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified.”*

**Luke 6:47-48 says,**

*47 “Whoever comes to Me and hears My sayings and does them, I will show you whom he is like:*

*48 He is like a man building a house, who dug deep and laid the foundation on the rock. And when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently against that house, and could not shake it, for it was founded on the rock.”*



David, unlike his brothers, had a personal relationship with God, which he developed while in the wilderness tending the sheep. He is the one who wrote Psalm 23. Certainly during his conversations with God, David learned about the blood covenant. Notice how David takes control of his thoughts in full view of potential danger and negative circumstances. David was speaking the Word of faith; he was slinging smooth stones at his thoughts.

Notice David's faith statements in Psalm 23.

**Psalm 23:1-6 (KJV) says,**

*1 "The LORD is my shepherd; I shall not want.*

*2 He maketh me to lie down in green pastures: he leadeth me beside the still waters.*

*3 He restoreth my soul: he leadeth me in the paths of righteousness for his name's sake.*

*4 Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for thou art with me; thy rod and thy staff they comfort me.*

*5 Thou preparest a table before me in the presence of mine enemies: thou anointest my head with oil; my cup runneth over.*

*6 Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me all the days of my life: and I will dwell in the house of the LORD for ever."*

***Smooth stones.***

David perhaps chose smooth stones, ones that had been through years of polishing in the river, because they were aerodynamic and would hit their mark with accuracy. Our polished stones are those Scriptures, which God has made real to us, those that have been polished in our meditation, memorization, and study. We need to "polish" some stones, some of the Word, so that we may have our "smooth stones of grace" with which to fell our giants, demonic and negative thoughts.

**Beware, apply the blood!**

***When you hear and receive a word, a seed is planted; that is a fact of life!***

Thoughts become words, then they bear fruit. Satan also plants thoughts, which become words.

**Matthew 13:25** says,

25 “[B]ut while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat and went his way.”

These thoughts and words eventually bear Satan’s fruit. Your old nature and Satan scream at you to speak out these thoughts. All this does is “water the seed.” This is a counterfeit for God’s process. We are to allow His Word to enter our heart, and then speak it out aloud. Many people go around looking for someone who will listen to their negative thoughts, always complaining. Do not rehearse your negative thoughts. Instead, take them to Jesus; take them to the Cross. How? Confess them to Jesus as a sin, be real with Him, and tell Him how you feel, but as you are speaking, make sure you let Him know that you know that these are inordinate thoughts. Thank Him for forgiving you and cleansing you.

***Now you take the Word, your smooth stone, put it into the sling of your mouth, and speak it to your Goliath every time your thoughts begin to attempt to take over your life in a negative way.***

Take your every thought captive. Do what the security people do at the airports. When they see a dangerous object in the X-ray machine, they stop it and take it captive. They say, “Access denied.” The verb in the Scripture I used above (2 Corinthians 10:5) is lead, “and we lead every thought and purpose away captive into the obedience of Christ.” When you sense an ungodly thought, lead it into captivity by beginning to speak God’s Word and obey Him.

**As ungodly thoughts arise, lead them into death.**

The obedience of Christ as stated in 2 Corinthians 10:5 was the obedience unto death, the death of the Cross.

**Philippians 2:8** says,

8 “*And being found in appearance as a man, He humbled Himself and became obedient to the point of death, even the death of the cross.*”

I have experienced as I lead my thoughts into death, that it makes room in my mind for the resurrected thoughts of Jesus, through the Holy Spirit. If our mind is crowded, there will be no room to hear God speak His thoughts. After death comes resurrection. It works!

Therefore we are to take our inordinate thoughts (thoughts that can lead us to think and eventually to speak and act in ways that are not only displeasing in God’s sight, but also are destructive to our own life) and lead them into the death chamber. We do that by confession and repentance, as many times as it takes. We replace them with the Word of God. We meditate on the Word and speak the Word, which will ultimately be the death instrument to our bad thoughts.

I have felt the comfort of God speak to me about this struggle. God is more concerned with what we hunger for than how we act. If you have been struggling with inordinate thoughts, or even with ungodly actions, the thing to examine is what are you hungry for. If you dislike your thoughts and actions, then it is evident that you are hungry for righteousness. The promise to you therefore is that you will be filled, Matthew 5:6.

Along with this, it is important to forgive those who may have originated your problem, forgive those who discourage you, and turn your back on your own fleshly power. Then watch your stone hit the giant and tell him. Then take the sword of the Spirit and cut Goliath’s head off!

**In summary:**

Jesus gave us the Blood Covenant that removes our sin. One of the main benefits of that is that we may have a *knowing* of Him, an intimacy. When we are in the present tense of knowing Him, His power works in us, for us, and for others in the world. Satan knows that our thought life can keep us from the power of God; therefore that is where he concentrates his “big guns.”

**What are some warfare disciplines?**

Keep your mind standing on the Word of God. Meditate on the Word. Keep a habit of an honest confession pouring out your heart to the Lord. Keep the Word coming out of your mouth. Practice a life of praise, worship, and thanksgiving. Repentance from an ungodly lifestyle or habit will lift the veil of our misunderstanding of the Word of God, and will make the Word alive to your mind and heart (2 Corinthians 3:16).

**The armor of God is described in Ephesians chapter 6.**

**1. Stand against the devil.** This means to protect your position of victory.

**2. Gird your waist with truth.** Always demand from yourself truth and integrity in your lifestyle. You will reap whatever you sow. Therefore always be truthful and repent of any deceit, otherwise you will not hear God speaking the truth.

**3. Breastplate of righteousness.** Knowing our righteousness and who we are in Him. Continually studying and confirming that issue.

**4. Shod your feet** with the preparation of the Gospel of peace.

**5. Above all take up the shield of faith to quench the fiery darts.** Faith comes by the Word.

**6. Helmet of salvation.** This is to protect your mind. Meditate in the Word, as the Bible says, day and night.

**7. The sword of the Spirit, the Word of God.** Speak the Word out loud.

**8. Praying always in the spirit,** being watchful with perseverance and supplication. Praying for extended periods of time in the Holy Spirit is very powerful. It will bring supernatural results into your life!!

Now, follow the warfare path of David to break your old unregenerated thought pattern. Become a covenant thinker! The result of a successful battle is peace. Take advantage of the time of peace to practice the presence of God through the Holy Spirit within you.

## Chapter 17

### From Lo Debar to Jerusalem

2



**Samuel 9:1-6 says,**

*1 “Now David said, ‘Is there still anyone who is left of the house of Saul, that I may show him kindness for Jonathan’s sake?’*

*2 And there was a servant of the house of Saul whose name was Ziba. So when they had called him to David, the king said to him, ‘Are you Ziba?’ And he said, ‘At your service!’*

*3 Then the king said, ‘Is there not still someone of the house of Saul, to whom I may show the kindness of God?’ And Ziba said to the king, ‘There is still a son of Jonathan who is lame in his feet.’*

*4 So the king said to him, ‘Where is he?’ And Ziba said to the king, ‘Indeed he is in the house of Machir the son of Ammiel, in Lo Debar.’*

*5 Then King David sent and brought him out of the house of Machir the son of Ammiel, from Lo Debar.*

*6 Now when Mephibosheth the son of Jonathan, the son of Saul, had come to David, he fell on his face and prostrated himself. Then David said, ‘Mephibosheth?’ And he answered, ‘Here is your servant!’”*

***Lo Debar means ‘a place of no bread’.***

Jesus is the bread of life. The Word is our bread. Lo Debar to us is the place of no Word. In the story, Mephibosheth lived in Lo Debar. He was withering away because he had no Word, even in view of the fact that he was the lawful recipient of a blood covenant with a king.

***Is it possible that you are living in a Lo Debar?***

Could you be living in a state of mind that does not recognize the depth of the relationship, and the consequences thereof, of a blood covenant with a King?

**Jesus said that the Word of God will connect us to His blood covenant.**

**John 6:50-51, 54-56, 63 says,**

50 *“This is the bread which comes down from heaven, that one may eat of it and not die.*

51 *I am the living bread which came down from heaven. If anyone eats of this bread, he will live forever; and the bread that I shall give is My flesh, which I shall give for the life of the world.”*

54 *“Whoever eats My flesh and drinks My blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day.*

55 *For My flesh is food indeed, and My blood is drink indeed.*

56 *He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him.”*

63 *“It is the Spirit who gives life; the flesh profits nothing. The words that I speak to you are spirit, and they are life.”*

***Jesus spoke the above to poor people, people who did not even have food to eat. This was His way of providing for them.***

He explained to them, the hungry and desperate, that their needs would be met through a blood covenant with Him. He told them that the covenant would not only supply their eternal needs, but also their food for today. Jesus made it clear that the blood covenant worked by His Words planted into their hearts.

Most people do not understand covenant, especially blood covenant. It is the strongest relationship that exists and it carries the most responsibility! Also, most people do not relate the blood covenant to the Word of God.

**David blessed Mephibosheth out of covenant love.**

The word for covenant love is *checed*. *Checed*, a Hebrew word, means covenant love. In Greek the same covenant love is *agape*.

The First Testament gives *cheched* a very weak translation, usually calling it loving kindness or mercy. It can only be described in terms of a blood covenant.

**Psalm 23:6** says,

*6 “Surely goodness and mercy [cheched] shall follow me all the days of my life...”*

David asked, “Is there anyone still left of the house of Saul to whom I can show kindness for Jonathan’s sake?” (2 Samuel 9:1). That was the cry of David, but it is also the cry of Jesus.

**Ephesians 2:4 (Amplified Bible)** says,

*4 “But God – so rich is He in His mercy! Because of and in order to satisfy the great and wonderful and intense love with which He loved us.”*

David was an example of the heart of God showing that He has an ache to bless His covenant people. David was a callused warrior, but he cried out to bless his blood covenant family.

### **Who was Mephibosheth?**

It all started with the tremendous love between David and Jonathan. Jonathan was King Saul’s son. Saul was jealous of David who had been anointed king. Saul was trying to kill David. In spite of this tension, David and Jonathan had a strong respect and a deep love for one another. I don’t think that we can even compare it to something in our lives today, because they had a different culture then.

**Jonathan, Mephibosheth’s father, had made a covenant with David.**

**1 Samuel 18:1-4** says,

*1 “Now when he had finished speaking to Saul, the soul of Jonathan was knit to the soul of David, and Jonathan loved him as his own soul.*

*2 Saul took him that day, and would not let him go home to his father’s house anymore.*

*3 Then Jonathan and David made a covenant, because he loved him as his own soul.*

*4 And Jonathan took off the robe that was on him and gave it to David, with his armor, even to his sword and his bow and his belt.”*

Notice, as we have discussed in previous lessons, how the weapons were swapped in the blood covenant.

Many times, as recorded in 1 Samuel, Jonathan incurred his father’s wrath because he constantly defended and protected David. His father Saul had even threatened to kill Jonathan, his own son.

Do you recall when David was going to fight Goliath that Saul offered David his belt of armour? That was a covenant act. However, David did not need a covenant relationship with Saul in order to kill the giant, he referred to the fact that he already had a covenant with God the creator! He called Goliath an “uncircumcised Philistine.” In other words, “You may be a giant, but you don’t have the covenant that I have with my Giant.”

**The following is some historic background about fighting with the Philistines, and war in the divided kingdom.**

There was intense war between Israel and the Philistines during this time. Also during this time, Saul was continually trying to kill David out of jealousy. Even though David had been anointed king, he respected Saul’s present position as king and submitted to him. David passed up several chances to kill Saul out of respect for Saul’s position. Perhaps he had respect not only for the office of king, but for the covenant he had cut with Saul’s son, Jonathan.

In 2 Samuel 1:1, David learned about the death of Saul and Jonathan during the war. Saul had seen his defeat with the Philistines, so he asked an Amalekite to kill him.

After the death of Saul and Jonathan, David was anointed king over Judah, but Saul’s family anointed Ishbosheth king over Israel. Abner was the commander of Saul’s army. He anointed Ishbosheth (his name means, to boast or act proudly) as king because he was Saul’s 40-year old son.



The kingdom was divided, and Israel and Judah went to war. Joab was David's general, and Abner was the general for Israel. They had bitter battles in 2 Samuel chapters 2-3. I believe that this war was a continuation of Saul's hatred, and his family's hatred for David.

Joab ended up killing Abner, but only after Abner came to David to try to make peace. David not only felt bad about Saul and Jonathan dying, but also about Abner. How could David have such a love and respect for the people who were trying to kill him?

Ishbosheth was murdered (2 Samuel 4). David was made king over both kingdoms.

It is with this bloody background that fear hit the house where Mephibosheth was living and the nurse dropped him and made him crippled for life. Fear of David caused the accident. But David was not after them to hurt them. David actually mourned for Abner and Saul (2 Samuel 3:33). This was the heart of *cheched*, covenant love.

**It was with this historic background that King David cried out to bless someone in Saul's household.**

Can you imagine after all of the abuse David received from the house of Saul, that he now is aching to bless one of Saul's descendents?

**2 Samuel 9:1-6 says,**

*1 "Now David said, 'Is there still anyone who is left of the house of Saul, that I may show him kindness for Jonathan's sake?'*

*2 And there was a servant of the house of Saul whose name was Ziba. So when they had called him to David, the king said to him, 'Are you Ziba?' And he said, 'At your service!'*

*3 Then the king said, 'Is there not still someone of the house of Saul, to whom I may show the kindness of God?' And Ziba said to the king, 'There is still a son of Jonathan who is lame in his feet.'*

*4 So the king said to him, ‘Where is he?’ And Ziba said to the king, ‘Indeed he is in the house of Machir the son of Ammiel, in Lo Debar.’*

*5 Then King David sent and brought him out of the house of **Machir** the son of **Ammiel**, from Lo Debar.*

*6 Now when Mephibosheth the son of Jonathan, the son of Saul, had come to David, he fell on his face and prostrated himself. Then David said, ‘Mephibosheth?’ And he answered, ‘Here is your servant!’”*

In the above Scripture, *Makir* means salesman, a merchandiser, as if to sell a daughter into a marriage of slavery. *Ammiel* means a clan of the people of God. Put them together and we see that we can be people of God who are sold into the slavery. This is Lo Debar, the place of no supplies, no bread of God, a place where our own self-sufficiency has made us slaves to Satan even though we are children of God.

**2 Samuel 9:7-13 says,**

*7 “So David said to him, ‘Do not fear, for I will surely show you kindness for Jonathan your father’s sake, and will restore to you all the land of Saul your grandfather; and you shall eat bread at my table continually.’*

*8 Then he bowed himself, and said, ‘What is your servant, that you should look upon such a dead dog as I?’*

*9 And the king called to Ziba, Saul’s servant, and said to him, ‘I have given to your master’s son all that belonged to Saul and to all his house.’*

*10 You therefore, and your sons and your servants, shall work the land for him, and you shall bring in the harvest, that your master’s son may have food to eat. But Mephibosheth your master’s son shall eat bread at my table always.’ Now Ziba had fifteen sons and twenty servants.*

*11 Then Ziba said to the king, ‘According to all that my lord the king has commanded his servant, so will your servant do.’ ‘As for Mephibosheth,’ said the king, ‘he shall eat at my table like one of the king’s sons.’*

*12 Mephibosheth had a young son whose name was Micha. And all who dwelt in the house of Ziba were servants of Mephibosheth.*

*13 So Mephibosheth dwelt in Jerusalem, for he ate continually at the king’s table. And he was lame in both his feet.”*

***Mephibosheth’s departure to Jerusalem is a picture of our advance.***

His name means a dispeller of confusion and shame; one that scatters and breaks into pieces. Apparently, God was using this name to indicate that when one finally gets to Jerusalem and understands that he has a blood covenant with the King, all the shame of the past is dispelled and broken into small pieces and cast out forever.

Shame is a killer because it lies against who God made you to be. Shame attacks your very being and says that you will never be worthy or any good. You may have done some terrible things, which brings guilt, but God is not casting shame on you. He says to you that you are His, that you are righteous and His son/daughter.

Remember, Mephibosheth was Jonathan’s son, the grandson of Saul, who had tried to kill David. He had been living beneath his rights. He had a covenant with the king and did not know it. He was living in Lo Debar, which means a place of no bread. He was actually living in fear of David, the king of Judah and Israel. His maid dropped him when he was young as the family was fleeing. They thought that they were fleeing the wrath of David. However, they were mistaken.

***David sent for Mephibosheth to demonstrate His love by providing for him. Jesus is calling us out from our Lo Debar to our Jerusalem, from a place of no Word, to the Word of God that will provide for all of our needs.***

Jesus is sending for us to tell us of His love, and He is sending us to tell others of His love for them. But our job is to move into abiding in His Word, to sustaining our life in and by His Word.

I can only imagine the entourage that the king must have sent for Mephibosheth. I can only imagine what fear Mephibosheth must have felt when he saw all of the army and weaponry of Israel at his front door.

David made sure that Mephibosheth was served the rest of his life by Ziba and his family. They ran the farm for Mephibosheth. David already had possession of Saul's wealth; the rest of Saul's family had pretty much melted into the desert. David could have kept this wealth, but he chose to exercise his covenant love, his *cheved*.

David exercised all of his kingly authority for this covenant, and Mephibosheth ate at David's table the rest of his life. **Did Mephibosheth deserve this? No, absolutely no!**

### **Why do we need a blood covenant with a king?**

Since the beginning of creation, man was the subject of blood covenants. Adam had a covenant with God that he broke. Many primitive cultures still believe that blood covenant brothers are closer relatives than those born of the same mother. A *blood* covenant intermingles the life of both partners and creates a new common life.

That is what we needed, God's life inserted into us so that we could return to normal. Adam and Eve had God in them. The problem was that Eve wanted to please herself, Adam wanted to please Eve, and no one wanted to please God, so He had to move out. Now through the blood covenant He can move back in. You will see in the following paragraphs how now we can please Him by bearing fruit (John 15).

***Do you cut your wrist and drink blood in order to have a blood covenant with God?***

No! The spiritual blood is transferred by words!

**John 6:63 says,**

63 *“It is the Spirit who gives life; the flesh profits nothing. The words that I speak to you are spirit, and they are life.”*

Jesus told the poor people in this chapter that they needed to get rid of their curse. They needed to eat His flesh and drink His blood. Then He made the transition to the spiritual. He said the flesh profits nothing, but His Words are spirit and they are life. Read the story in John 6.

Words are the only medium that transfers life between the spiritual and natural realms.

**Luke 4:4 (KJV) says,**

4 *“And Jesus answered him, saying, ‘It is written, That man shall not live [sustain his life] by bread alone, but by every word of God.’”*

***Jesus is aching to bless you and me with His covenant love.***

It says in Ephesians 2:4 (Amplified Bible) that He aches to “satisfy the great and wonderful and intense love with which He loved us.” His primary method of transferring His life, His blood, His blessings, is through His Word. He does not just dispense blessings like in a cafeteria line; today I need funds, next week I need healing, etc. No. He dispenses Himself, His very life; that is the blessing! He does that through His Word anointed by the Holy Spirit. He reserves His blessings for the simple, the childlike, the desperate, and hides them from the proud and religious intellectual people.

God delivers everything we need to make it in this life and everything we need to develop godly character by giving us His promises in the Word. Then we stand on that Word until its own power does the work. That is blood covenant! That is His power and not ours! That is grace!

**2 Peter 1:3-4 says,**

3 *“as His divine power has given to us all things that pertain to life and godliness, through the knowledge of Him who called us by glory and virtue,*

*4 by which have been given to us exceedingly great and precious promises, that through these you may be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.”*

God provided a fruit producing garden for Adam and Eve, but they wanted their independence, therefore from that point forward, they and all mankind, had to work through “sweat and thorns” to provide for themselves. Now God wants us to go back from “thorns to fruit.” What I am writing below is not a “formula” with which to manipulate God’s power. However, it is a very important mystery that God wants the humble, childlike and honest people to know, so that in their intimacy with Him they may expect Him to provide the best life that He has in mind.

**Listen closely! This is a mystery that Jesus unveiled for us.**

**Mark 4:11 says,**

*11 “And He said to them, ‘To you it has been given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God; but to those who are outside, all things come in parables.’”*

***Notice, He said the mystery, not a mystery.***

I am very passionate about this topic! Jesus said that we should sustain our lives by the Word of God; meaning the Word should be our supply for everything we require for life and godliness, 2 Peter 1:3.

We were designed to live our lives by bearing fruit, not by personal ingenuity and effort only. Too many Christians do not live this way, and sometimes even those that do, do it without being intentional about it.

***As I express below, it is supposed to work like this:***

1. The Word of God spoken to you personally is a seed planted in your heart. It is not just a spiritual idea, it is a real seed. This comes naturally by our intimacy with God as we fellowship with Him.

2. The seed, if cared for, will produce fruit for everything that you need for your character, your earthly needs, and your

eternal purpose for the Kingdom of God. Everything we need for life and godliness.

3. The three categories of fruit are represented by what was placed inside the Ark of the Covenant, which was in the Temple of God, which is now your body. Those are:

a. The Law which is now in you so that your character will conform to the God who now lives inside of you.

b. Manna, which represents everything you need to live this temporal life.

c. Aaron's Rod that supernaturally budded in the Holy of Holies, which represents your "ministry," or your purpose on earth for His Kingdom.

So many Christians live contrary to this plan. Even many ministers are event-oriented, experience-oriented, or works-oriented. While these activities may produce some good results, they are intended to be the by-product of fruit and are not supposed to replace fruit.

I believe that ignorance of this idea is one main reason that believers do not live by it. I further believe that one cannot receive the truth of it until one becomes desperate. God expressed this thought through Isaiah in Isaiah chapter 6. Jesus stated in Mark chapter 4 that many will not be able to understand the fruit bearing process because they willfully rejected the truth, Mark 4:12 Amplified Bible.

**Here is how you can move from Lo Debar to Jerusalem.**

First, we need to make sure that we are "sitting at the King's Table" in His presence as Mephibosheth was. We need to adjust our wills, minds and emotions to sync with Him so that our souls may prosper.

**3 John 1:1-4:**

*1 THE ELDER, To the beloved Gaius, whom I love in truth:*

*2 Beloved, I pray that you may prosper in all things and be in health, just as your soul prospers.*

*3 For I rejoiced greatly when brethren came and testified of the truth that is in you, just as you walk in the truth.*

*4 I have no greater joy than to hear that my children walk in truth.”*

***This parable in Mark chapter 4:1-20 is one of the most important passages in Scripture. It shows us how the Word of God transfers covenant benefits to us.***

**Mark 4:1-15 says,**

*1 “And again He began to teach by the sea. And a great multitude was gathered to Him, so that He got into a boat and sat in it on the sea; and the whole multitude was on the land facing the sea.*

*2 Then He taught them many things by parables, and said to them in His teaching:*

*3 ‘Listen! Behold, a sower went out to sow.*

*4 And it happened, as he sowed, that some seed fell by the wayside; and the birds of the air came and devoured it.*

*5 Some fell on stony ground, where it did not have much earth; and immediately it sprang up because it had no depth of earth.*

*6 But when the sun was up it was scorched, and because it had no root it withered away.*

*7 And some seed fell among thorns; and the thorns grew up and choked it, and it yielded no crop.*

*8 But other seed fell on good ground and yielded a crop that sprang up, increased and produced: some thirtyfold, some sixty, and some a hundred.’*

*9 And He said to them, ‘He who has ears to hear, let him hear!’*

*10 But when He was alone, those around Him with the twelve asked Him about the parable.*

*11 And He said to them, ‘To you it has been given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God; but to those who are outside, all things come in parables,*

*12 so that ‘Seeing they may see and not perceive, And hearing they may hear and not understand; Lest they should turn, And their sins be forgiven them.’”*



*13 And He said to them, ‘Do you not understand this parable? How then will you understand all the parables?’*

*14 The sower sows the word. [The sower is God, through Jesus, the Word and the Holy Spirit, perhaps through the agency of man]*

*15 [heart condition number one, a hard heart] And these are the ones by the wayside where the word is sown. When they hear, Satan comes immediately and takes away the word that was sown in their hearts.”*

***Satan is real!***

His only real weapon is to steal the Word. He is a liar and deceiver. He knows that the Word defeated him, so he convinces people in general and even Christians that they do not need to live on the Word of God. He portrays it as a rulebook, a guide to live by, something we are obligated to read in order to be good Christians. He hides the supernatural qualities of the Word.

**Mark 4:16-17 says,**

*16 [heart condition number two, a shallow heart] “These likewise are the ones sown on stony ground who, when they hear the word, immediately receive it with gladness;*

*17 and they have no root in themselves, and so endure only for a time. Afterward, when tribulation or persecution arises for the word’s sake, immediately they stumble.”*

***Tribulation and persecution will come after you receive the Word.***

Satan attempts to make us think that we did not hear the Word. He makes us become ashamed of the Word through persecution. He tells us, “See, the Word is not working.” However, if you know that this is the script of life, then you can endure. Tribulation of some sort will come into your life when you depend upon the Word!

**Mark 4:18-20 says,**

18 **[heart condition number three, a worldly heart]** *“Now these are the ones sown among thorns; they are the ones who hear the word,*

19 *and the cares of this world, the deceitfulness of riches, and the desires for other things entering in choke the word, and it becomes unfruitful.*

20 **[heart condition number four, an honest heart]** *But these are the ones sown on good ground, those who hear the word, accept it, and bear fruit: some thirtyfold, some sixty, and some a hundred.’”*

**Luke 8:15 says,**

15 *“But the ones that fell on the good ground are those who, having heard the word with a noble and good heart, keep it and bear fruit with patience.”*

As we practice intimacy with Jesus through prayer and His Word, He plants the Word-seed into the ground of our hearts, and His purposes are realized through us in the fruit bearing process.

**Here in this parable we see all three applications of the Word.**

Sit, Walk, and Stand. *Sit* represents our position in Christ as in Ephesians 2:6. He made us who we are by His own blood. We had nothing to do with that. That is our identity. *Walk* is in Ephesians 4, which states that now that we know who we are, we should walk or live our lives in accordance with who we really are. That is our responsibility. When we do not measure up in our lifestyle, we repent and the grace of God kicks in with its power to make our lives conform to the Christ in us. *Stand* is in Ephesians chapter 6, and indicates that we are in a war to keep the Word planted in our hearts. We cannot stand unless we are living right, and we cannot live right unless we know who we are. They are all interdependent.

The Word is our seed or promise, and we must *Walk* and *Stand* in order to keep Satan from stealing our seed. When all

three combine, fruit comes. Fruit of character, fruit for temporal needs and fruit for reaching others for the Kingdom.

**This is the overcoming process.**

It usually entails much pain. Seeds, even though silent, work with much violence. One cannot bear fruit without challenges, trials and even suffering.

**Matthew 11:12 says,**

*12 “And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffers violence, and the violent take it by force.”*

The word *violence* has a Greek definition that infers the type of violence that occurs when something is growing.

***There is a wonderful analogy between natural and spiritual fruit.***

In the natural first a seed must be planted. Then the seed must suffer death and stay in the ground for a prescribed period of time, buried to death by the dirt and the ground. But behold, the seed overcomes death and springs to life and brings fruit, plenty for the gardener and more left over to feed others. It has taken the “spoils of the enemy that killed it” and has blessed many.

In the same way, Jesus’ Word is a seed planted in the ground of our heart. It too “dies.” We suffer trails, tribulations, challenges, and pain. But behold, it is resurrected by the supernatural power of God in His time. Not only does it bless the person bearing the fruit, but in much the same way as natural fruit, it too takes the spoils of the spiritual enemy that has caused us pain and tribulation and thus it too blesses many, much more than just ourselves!

### **From Streams in the Desert:** <sup>20</sup>

*“Some of the spoils won in battles they dedicated to maintain the house of the LORD” (1 Chronicles 26:27).*

*Physical force is stored in the bowels of the earth, in the coal mines, which came from the fiery heat that burned up great forests in ancient ages; and so spiritual force is stored in the depths of our being, through the very pain which we cannot understand. Someday we shall find that the spoils we have won from our trials were just preparing us to become true "Great Hearts" in the Pilgrim's Progress, and to lead our fellow pilgrims triumphantly through trial to the table of the King.*

*But let us never forget that the source of helping other people must be victorious suffering. The whining, murmuring pang never does anybody any good.*

*Paul did not carry a cemetery with him, but a chorus of victorious praise; and the harder the trial, the more he trusted and rejoiced, shouting from the very altar of sacrifice. He said, "Yea, and if I be offered upon the service and sacrifice of your faith, I joy and rejoice with you all." Lord, help me this day to draw strength from all that comes to me! From Days of Heaven upon Earth.*

*He placed me in a little cage,  
Away from gardens fair  
But I must sing the sweetest songs  
Because He placed me there.  
Not beat my wings against the cage  
If it's my Maker's will,  
But raise my voice to heaven's gate  
And sing the louder still!*

---

<sup>20</sup> Mrs. Charles E. Cowman, *Streams In The Desert*. Zondervan, Grand Rapids, MI: 1925

Knowing that the seed has been planted in your heart is like being pregnant. You can praise God for the victory before you see the actual event take place, just like a pregnant woman can praise God for her baby before she sees it with her eyes. If you know it is in there, take care of it and it will bring fruit.

***Faith comes by hearing the Word of God.***

Faith cannot be worked up by trying hard. Faith just comes when the Word is planted in your heart. You just know that you know! Satan will try to steal the Word and cause an abortion with doubt, but you can stand!

Hebrews 11:1 says that faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not yet seen. The evidence is the Word. You know that there is a seed substance in your heart.

***This whole thing seems so unreligious and simple, and it is.***

It is not for the intellectual and the religious; it is for simple childlike desperate people. Jesus even said that He has hid the Kingdom from the wise and revealed it to children. I have seen people in the very worst conditions one could imagine, bear fruit for their lives following this lifestyle.

Do you think that God would say, “Oh my goodness, I can’t bless those people in war-torn Africa, there are no jobs there?” Do you think He would say, “Your situation is just too difficult and complicated for Me?”

Does the small fish worry that the sea will run out of water, does the sparrow worry about there not being enough air to fly?

No, God is saying “In Lo Debar you will die, but come to Jerusalem like Mephibosheth did and eat the Word of covenant at the King’s table.”

If you are not trusting in God’s Word to be planted in your heart, in order to supply your every need, you are living in Lo Debar. You need to move to Jerusalem!

Now pack your bags and move from Lo Debar to Jerusalem. You will be blessed and be a blessing.

**Mephibosheth’s last days.**

2 Samuel chapter 16:1-4 reveals the story of how Ziba, Mephibosheth's servant, successfully connived to steal Mephibosheth's land inheritance, the entire estate that belonged to Saul, his grandfather. Ziba lied to David about Mephibosheth, accusing him of attempting to take the king's throne from David (2 Samuel 16:1-4).

David went along with it for a time until he encountered Mephibosheth personally as recorded in 2 Samuel 19:24-30. The record was set straight and the lie that Ziba told was revealed. David, in an effort to restore the inheritance to Mephibosheth, declared that Saul's estate would be divided between Mephibosheth and Ziba. Mephibosheth answered with a most remarkable statement. He told David to let Ziba have the entire inheritance, and that all he wanted was to be with David. He was just happy that David had survived and that being with him would be enough.

**What have I to do any more with idols?**

When you have spent time with Jesus, the King, houses and lands lose their luster. Just to be with Him is enough! That is what the blood covenant can do for you!

*Reproduction, resale or internet posting prohibited*

## Chapter 18

### The Blood Covenant – Purpose for Your Life

We all need hope and purpose for our lives. I know in my life that I had come to the end of all the plans and purposes that I could have imagined. I kept trying to discover why I was put here, and what God's reasoning was for creating me. After I had achieved one of my financial dreams at 30 years old, I felt emptier than ever and cried out to a God that I had not yet met. I told Him that obviously He had created humans, just look at the genius of our bodies, our circulatory system, our brain, etc. I felt that if He created something so great, then how could humans just waste their lives on things that did not matter. He heard my cry, but waited eight more years to reveal Himself to me.

I heard a man tell me one time, "I can live without love, without faith, but I cannot live without hope." I think he had something to say.

What is hope? How does it relate to purpose in life? The Biblical meaning of hope is not anything like the common *hope* we often use, as in, "Oh, I hope this thing works out for me."

**Biblical hope means the expectation of good, to anticipate the future with pleasure.**

Hope is like the architectural drawings for a building yet to be built. It is the design, the vision of what cannot yet be seen. After the architect makes the drawings, or creates the vision, then the builder must add energy to create what the drawings say.

Another analogy is that hope is like the thermostat on your furnace; it is the goal-setting device. You look at the thermometer and it shows that the house is only 50 degrees. You desire the temperature to be 70 degrees. Do you just look at it and complain? No. You turn the thermostat to 70 degrees and create the hope, or the vision. Now the furnace must be powerful enough to implement the vision. If it is not, it does not matter how high you turn the thermostat.

***Many people nullify hope by touching the dead things of the past.***

In Numbers chapter 19 we read that the people, and priests, were forbidden to touch dead things. Touching dead things, the

corpses of our past, our failures, our losses, brings a curse to our lives and nullifies hope for the future, it ties God's hands.

There is a time for dealing with the difficult things in our past, but that should be God's initiative. He will take us back to the cause of wounds in our lives and give us inner healing. However, once that is accomplished, we need no longer "go back and touch the dead."

Psalm 23:6 says, "Surely goodness [prosperity, moral goodness] and mercy [cheched, meaning His unconditional covenant love, akin to agape] shall follow me all the days of my life; and I will dwell in the house of the LORD forever."

Some people would ask, "Why would God's prosperity, His goodness, and His unconditional covenant love *follow* me, rather than go before me?" It is because our past needs help and healing. God is covering our past with His love, forgiveness, and mercy. When we know that our past (our wounds, our sin, our mistakes, our former enemies) is taken care of, then our present and our future can be abundant. We can then dwell in His house forever, or in other words, have intimacy with Him.

***The remedy for this sin was the Red Heifer, representing the sacrifice of Jesus on the Cross.***

**Numbers 19:13, 16-17 says,**

13 "Whoever touches the body of anyone who has died, and does not purify himself, defiles the tabernacle of the LORD. That person shall be cut off from Israel. He shall be unclean, because the water of purification was not sprinkled on him; his uncleanness is still on him."

16 "Whoever in the open field touches one who is slain by a sword or who has died, or a bone of a man, or a grave, shall be unclean seven days."

17 "And for an unclean person they shall take some of the ashes of the heifer burnt for purification from sin, and running water shall be put on them in a vessel."



**Philippians 3:13 says,**

*13 “Brethren, I do not count myself to have apprehended; but one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind and reaching forward to those things which are ahead.”*

***We often create our own hope that is not God’s plan for our lives.***

I used to create my own visions, as most of you probably have. The problem was that none of them were God’s plan for my life. Some of them came about; those that my own power could perform. Many did not. Even those that came to pass were total disappointments because I did not know about God’s vision, God’s hope for me.

**Galatians 6:7 says,**

*7 “Do not be deceived, God is not mocked; for whatever a man sows, that he will also reap.”*

I had reaped some bad “stuff” because I had sown bad things. I was not living my vision, or dream. I had become miserable, and felt powerless to change things.

When we create our own hope, we are sowing bad seeds for our lives; we are actually sowing sin. Not only do we sow bad seeds, but also, most likely, our ancestors have sown bad seeds that we now reap due to the law of the generational curse.

***Creating our own hope brings Satan on our case.***

These are indeed bad seeds, but they potentially have more destructive power than one might think at first glance. Satan and his associates get a foothold, a legal right to perpetuate curses and destruction in our lives and in the lives of our families.

**Jacob was in much the same condition in Genesis chapters 30-31.**

If you have sown bad seeds in your life like Jacob did, and now you are reaping bad things into your life, hang on; the Blood Covenant will correct things.

***We must reach the end of ourselves like Jacob did.***

Jacob had reaped what he had sown. He was on a detour from God's plan, but not in God's mind. When we are marked by God, He comes to us in our prisons made by bad choices and gives us a vision, a Word, to rescue us. Jacob was marked as a covenant man. God has a perfect plan for each covenant son or daughter of His. It is a predestined path; it is called "abundant life." It is customized for each one of us. God intervened in Jacob's life with a vision, which set him free from the bondage, which was a result of his own sowing and reaping. The vision contained within itself the very power to perform that which God wanted for Jacob's life.

**Ephesians 2:10 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*10 "For we are God's [own] handiwork (His workmanship), recreated in Christ Jesus, [born anew] that we may do those good works which God predestined (planned beforehand) for us [taking paths which He prepared ahead of time], that we should walk in them [living the good life which He prearranged and made ready for us to live]."*

**How does this work?**

You might say that even if God gave you the hope, the vision for the future, that you don't have the power to pull it off. Good!

Here is how it works.

**Hebrews 11:1-2 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*1 "NOW FAITH is the assurance (the confirmation, the title deed) of the things [we] hope for, being the proof of things [we] do not see and the conviction of their reality [faith perceiving as real fact what is not revealed to the senses].*

*2 For by [faith – trust and holy fervor, born of faith] the men of old had divine testimony borne to them and obtained a good report."*

**1. Hope.**

Through your relationship with God in His Word, combined with the relationship skills we have been and will be defining,

God will plant a Word/seed into your heart. This is how He works.

**Romans 15:13** says,

*13 “Now may the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that you may abound in hope by the power of the Holy Spirit.”*

You may or may not know exactly what the seed represents. It may be a promise as precise as, “I will take care of your financial needs.” It may be very vague, as it’s usually the case when your future is concerned.

### **2. Faith.**

The seed that is planted in your heart has the ability to produce what it represents. The acorn has the power to produce an oak tree. The seed of corn has the ability to produce a new stalk of corn. I have been told, that if you were to cut open the acorn, you could see the picture of the oak tree it represents.

This Word that comes to you from God produces the faith that produces the title deed (the ownership) to the hope, or the vision, that God has for you.

### **3. Perseverance and obedience.**

The next step is to resist the doubt caused by the delay in time, and to resist Satan from stealing your seed.

**Hebrews 6:11-12** says,

*11 “And we desire that each one of you show the same diligence to the full assurance of hope until the end,*

*12 that you do not become sluggish, but imitate those who through faith and patience inherit the promises.”*

**There is good news!**

You may have been struggling with purpose for your life. Now God is saying to you that He not only has that purpose, hope or vision for you, but that His power is there to bring it to pass. Now that is good news!

***Psalm 37 shows how hope and desires come, and God***

*promises the power to bring them to pass.*

*First, He gives you the desires.*

**Psalm 37:4** says,

4 “*Delight yourself also in the LORD, and He shall give you the desires of your heart.*”

I submit that the word *delight* here infers having an intimate relationship with the Lord. When you do that, the promise is that He will insert in you the desires He wants you to desire. I do not think it means that He will give you whatever you desire apart from what He puts in your heart, but rather, He will insert in you the power to desire what He wants for you. His desires will become your desires.

*Then, He supplies the power.*

**Psalm 37:5** says,

5 “*Commit your way to the LORD, Trust also in Him, and He shall bring it to pass.*”

*Commit your way* infers to live a life of loving obedience to the Lord. Then, when you trust in that relationship and in His character, He will supply the power to bring your desires to pass. You do not have to have the power to live out your vision, your desire, and your dream! That is good news to those of us who know that we cannot make life work without Him. It gives real hope to the hopeless!

### **How did this work for Jacob’s life?**

Jacob had sown a lot of bad seeds in his life. He and his mom had deceived his father Isaac to receive the blessing of the first-born from his brother Esau. Jacob had been a deceiver, and even though God’s plan was for him to receive the blessing of the first-born, he had used ungodly principles to acquire it.

By time we catch up with Jacob in Genesis chapters 30-31, he was reaping a lot of bad fruit. He had hooked up with his uncle Laban, who turned out to be more of a manipulator than Jacob had been. Jacob fell in love with Rachel and made a deal with her father Laban to work for him for seven years in

exchange for her hand in marriage. Laban tricked Jacob and substituted Rachel with his more homely daughter Leah. Jacob made another deal to work an additional seven years for Rachel.

At the end of fourteen years God’s plans for Jacob had come into their fullness of time, and He moved with His sovereignty to put them into place. This was in spite of the bad seed he had sown and in spite of Satan’s plans to steal the birthright from Jacob.

***God gave Jacob a dream to get him to his purpose and destiny.***

The language of the Holy Spirit is to create pictures in our hearts through dreams, through illuminating His written Word, and other means, in order to write upon the “tablets of our hearts.” Then this heart picture becomes our “hope” and the “desires of our hearts.” We find ourselves wanting what God wants for our lives. It is safer to not always try to understand what God has for our future, because we can be self-deceived, interpreting God’s hope for an ungodly carnal desire. It is safer to know that God has planted hope in our hearts and trust Him to bring it to pass with His power, leaving “our power” out of the picture. We don’t need to “help” Him like Abraham did when Ishmael was conceived.

***The following is Jacob’s dream. The merciful God intervened in Jacob’s life.***

**Genesis 31:11-13 says,**

11 “Then the Angel of God spoke to me in a dream, saying, ‘Jacob.’ And I said, ‘Here I am.’”

12 And He said, ‘Lift your eyes now and see, all the rams which leap on the flocks are streaked, speckled, and gray-spotted; for I have seen all that Laban is doing to you.’”

13 I am the God of Bethel, where you anointed the pillar and where you made a vow to Me. Now arise, get out of this land, and return to the land of your family.’”

***Jacob made a deal with Laban as told in Genesis 30:25-43.***

He offered to work for Laban without specific wages, but that his compensation would only be the offspring of the cattle that had stripes and spots. To make it more interesting, Jacob agreed to move all the existing striped and spotted cattle three days journey from his ranch, and that he would only keep the solid color cattle. Laban could not understand how Jacob could breed cattle with stripes and spots if he only started with solid colors, so he quickly accepted the deal.

***Jacob then proceeded to take poplar rods and carve spots and stripes on them.***

He put these rods in and around the watering troughs where only the strong cattle would water and feed. He did not put these rods where the weaker cattle would feed. Every time the cattle would drink and eat, they would also get the vision from the rods.

***Notice that Jacob did not touch the dead things in his past.***

Rather he looked to the future with the God-given hope he had received. He did not linger with complaining about working those fourteen years for Laban and getting ripped off with deceit. He had hope, God had spoken hope and faith to Jacob, and he believed enough to forget about his past. Had he lingered in bitterness about his past, he would have never received God's blessing, the vision God had given him.

**Genesis 31:4-10 says,**

4 *“So Jacob sent and called Rachel and Leah to the field, to his flock,*

5 *and said to them, ‘I see your father’s countenance, that it is not favorable toward me as before; but the God of my father has been with me.*

6 *And you know that with all my might I have served your father.*

7 *Yet your father has deceived me and changed my wages ten times, but God did not allow him to hurt me.*

8 *If he said thus: ‘The speckled shall be your wages,’ then all the flocks bore speckled. And if he*

*said thus: 'The streaked shall be your wages,' then all the flocks bore streaked.*

*9 So God has taken away the livestock of your father and given them to me.*

*10 And it happened, at the time when the flocks conceived, that I lifted my eyes and saw in a dream, and behold, the rams which leaped upon the flocks were streaked, speckled, and gray-spotted.'"*

***Jacob became wealthy.***

His cattle began bringing forth offspring with stripes and spots in such great number that the Scripture says, "Thus the man became exceedingly prosperous, and had large flocks, female and male servants, and camels and donkeys" (Genesis 30:43). This allowed Jacob to take his wives and leave Laban to return to his own land, to his destiny. I suggest that you read this entire story in Genesis chapters 30-31.

After this, Jacob proceeded to his encounter with his estranged brother Esau, and his wrestling encounter with God, where his name was changed to Israel.

It is comforting to know that if we stay in constant and intimate relationship with the Lord, keep our hearts right and allow Him to plant His plans into our hearts, that He will rescue us from our detours in life and take us into our God-ordained purpose!

**God wants us to be co-creators with Him.**

He wanted the first Adam to be a co-creator. However, Adam did not continue in the Word of God, but he rather decided to produce his own hope and vision through his powerful mind.

***The Power to Create.***

**Ephesians 5:1 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*"Therefore be imitators of God [copy Him and follow His example], as well-beloved children [imitate their father]."*

Creating new things, changing old things. Because you and I are made in the image of God that's something we're always trying to do. But if we're to be successful at it, we need to learn a lesson about it from the Creator Himself, our very own heavenly Father.

In the original creation, God saw that what He originally created had become corrupt, and when He saw it He spoke out what His plan was. He did not speak what He saw; He spoke what He wanted it to be.

**Genesis 1:1-3 says,**

*1 “In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.*

*2 The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters.*

*3 Then God said, ‘Let there be light’; and there was light.”*

You know, He didn't just come upon creation by accident and say, “Well, what do you know! There's light!” No, before He began to recreate His universe, He first had a desired result (an inner idea, or image, of what He wanted to create) and then said, “Light be!” and light was.

His method of operation is stated in Romans 4:17, which says, “(as it is written, “I have made you a father of many nations”) in the presence of Him whom he believed – God, who gives life to the dead and calls those things which do not exist as though they did.”

As you continue in your authentic relationship with Jesus, you will discover a leading by Him, a guiding hand taking you into your purpose. You will discover desires and visions in your heart that were God-given. You may not interpret them properly at first. However, God will smooth out the rough places and transform your mistakes and failures into your ordained path. This path will take you into your purpose. Be diligent and trust Him.



***Understand, however, that Satan will attempt to discourage you.***

He has some power to perpetuate the curse, to cause the bad seed of sin in your past and in the past of your ancestors, to manifest itself. While this is still being manifested in your life, you need to know what is going on. You need to know that God is turning your life around like He did Jacob's. You need to hang on to the promise, to the hope, so that in the end it will be real in your life's experience. Jesus became a curse for you so that you would inherit the blessings.

***All of this is only possible because Jesus bore your curse on the Cross.***

Without that blood covenant exchange, you would be trapped in your own power to only bring your own man made plans to pass.

Your job during this period of hanging onto hope includes continually confessing the Word, the promise that God gave to you. It also includes speaking out in faith those Scriptures that apply generically.

**Jacob believed the dream that God gave to him.**

He believed it so much, that he cut spots and stripes into poplar rods and put them before the cattle so that they would prosper in their breeding. Back in 1981 when I still had my grocery store and deli, and business was looking very bleak, I painted spots and stripes on some posts in the parking lot. I looked at them every day as I drove up to the store. Eventually, God took me out of that business and put me in the business of His choice. Then, after many trials perpetrated by Satan and his associates, the new business prospered way beyond my possible expectations, and still is to this date.

**Hebrews 6:11-19 says,**

*11 "And we desire that each one of you show the same diligence to the full assurance of hope until the end,*

*12 that you do not become sluggish, but imitate those who through faith and patience inherit the promises.*

*13 For when God made a promise to Abraham, because He could swear by no one greater, He swore by Himself,*

*14 saying, ‘Surely blessing I will bless you, and multiplying I will multiply you.’*

*15 And so, after he had patiently endured, he obtained the promise.*

*16 For men indeed swear by the greater, and an oath for confirmation is for them an end of all dispute.*

*17 Thus God, determining to show more abundantly to the heirs of promise the immutability of His counsel, confirmed it by an oath,*

*18 that by two immutable things, in which it is impossible for God to lie, we might have strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold of the hope set before us.*

*19 This hope we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and steadfast, and which enters the Presence behind the veil.”*

**You do the same, and you will inherit the promise.**

*Reproduction, resale or internet posting prohibited*

## **Chapter 19**

### **The Blood Shed by Jesus for the Holy Spirit**

#### **God created man for relationship.**

As we study Scripture, we can see that without a blood covenant there can be no relationship; that is God's terms for relationship. People become dysfunctional because one or more relationships have been broken. Broken relationships are the primary cause of all of our problems, addictions, most ungodly behavior, and evil.

The simplicity of the Gospel, and indeed the blood covenant, is that God wants to return human beings to "normal." What is normal? A human vessel created by God from the dust of the earth, made in His image, and filled with His Spirit.

One more thing: there can be no covenant without death, or without blood shed by both parties. Throughout this book we have often spoken about our cross and His Cross. We must take up our cross (as we have described), which is our way of "shedding blood." We have seen God's wonderful commitment to us to give us His Spirit to inhabit our very beings through the blood covenant.

Not only is the blood covenant with God a total exchange of our sinful nature for His righteous and perfect nature, it is the very basis for continued fellowship. Even more, fellowship with Him is the very reason for the blood covenant. A dog can have a limited fellowship with a human because they are not of the same species. An unregenerated person can only have limited contact with God because that person is of a different species. But if somehow God can change his species to a New Creation, then the fellowship can be complete and be returned to normal.

#### **Jesus' blood was shed so we could receive the Holy Spirit.**

Jesus shed His blood on the Cross so that we could be cleansed from sin, to the end that we could be filled with His Spirit, and thus receive His life, and thus be saved. That is what takes us back into an intimate relationship with Him.

In a previous chapter we covered the story about Abram in the blood covenant ditch. There were two figures of Deity walking that ditch. One was Jesus who was making the covenant with the other figure of Deity on behalf of Abram, and in the end,

you and me. Had Abram attempted to make that covenant, he would have failed. Jesus took that failure and gave us the benefit.

What happened in that ditch? God exchanged natures with mankind. He gave Abram, through Jesus, the nature of God, the Holy Spirit. He took, through Jesus, and for Abram and you and me, the nature of Adam, the curse, the old nature that is destined for Hell. Galatians 3 tells about this.

**Galatians 3:13-14** says,

*13 “Christ has redeemed us from the curse of the law, having become a curse for us (for it is written, ‘Cursed is everyone who hangs on a tree’),*

*14 that the blessing of Abraham might come upon the Gentiles in Christ Jesus, that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.”*

**Galatians 3:29** says,

*29 “And if you are Christ’s, then you are Abraham’s seed, and heirs according to the promise.”*

***Do not settle for anything except for the Baptism in the Holy Spirit.***

**Matthew 3:11** says,

*11 “I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance, but He who is coming after me is mightier than I, whose sandals I am not worthy to carry. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and fire.”*

**‘To baptize’ means to totally immerse, to dunk something into a liquid until it dies, changes, and comes back to life in a different form.**

“Baptize” is defined in Strong’s Concordance as follows:

*“Baptizo. Not to be confused with bapto. The clearest example that shows the meaning of baptizo is a text from the Greek poet and physician Nicander, who lived about 200 B.C. It is a recipe for making*

*pickles and is helpful because it uses both words. Nicander says that in order to make a pickle, the vegetable should first be ‘dipped’ (bapto) into boiling water and then ‘baptised’ (baptizo) in the vinegar solution. Both verbs concern the immersing of vegetables in a solution. But the first is temporary. The second, the act of baptising the vegetable, produces a permanent change.*

*When used in the New Testament, this word more often refers to our union and identification with Christ than to our water baptism. e.g. Mark 16:16. ‘He that believes and is baptised shall be saved.’ Christ is saying that mere intellectual assent is not enough. There must be a union with him, a real change, like the vegetable to the pickle!*

*Bible Study Magazine, James Montgomery Boice, May 1989.”*

God offers all of us a “flooding” of our souls with the Holy Spirit. Too often believers settle for less. Usually it has to do with obstructions which keep the Holy Spirit confined to our spirit, rather than allow Him access to our mind, will, and emotions.

**A major benefit.**

A major, somewhat overlooked benefit for being full of the Holy Spirit to the level of overflowing is that it will make you eligible to be an overcomer and to see God raise the dead things in your life by His resurrection power.

Colossians 1:20 says that all things are reconciled by the blood of His Cross. *To reconcile* means to make a friend with someone or something that was formally at enmity with you. In other words, whatever challenges, sufferings, or other manifestations of “death” that come into your realm of influence, the Jesus in you can and wants to resurrect it into a blessing, a friend. Most of us have heard about Romans 8:28 which says that all things work together for good for those that love God and are called according to His purpose. Only when the life of Jesus

prevails over your old flesh nature, only then can resurrection take place in your life while you are still in your body. His purpose is to see you become a vessel for His resurrection power.

***Paul knew he could experience the resurrection power of God while still in his body.***

**Philippians 3:10-11 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*10 “[For my determined purpose is] that I may know Him [that I may progressively become more deeply and intimately acquainted with Him, perceiving and recognizing and understanding the wonders of His Person more strongly and more clearly], and that I may in that same way come to know the power outflowing from His resurrection [which it exerts over believers], and that I may so share His sufferings as to be continually transformed [in spirit into His likeness even] to His death, [in the hope] that if possible I may attain to the [spiritual and moral] resurrection [that lifts me] out from among the dead [even while in the body].”*

**When Jesus came into my life, I saw Him in the Book of Revelation as the ascended Christ, the victor and deliverer.**

At that point I became a man completely filled with the Holy Spirit. Rivers of living water gushed up out of my soul.

**John 7:38-39 says,**

*38 “He who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his heart will flow rivers of living water.”*

*39 But this He spoke concerning the Spirit, whom those believing in Him would receive; for the Holy Spirit was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified.”*

I did not speak in tongues right away, but received that gift about two months later, after I discovered it in Scripture. One predominate work that the Holy Spirit did in my life from the beginning, was to make Jesus real to me. I knew that Jesus was alive. I could experience “real-time communication” with Him through the Holy Spirit. People tried to give me their own and

often false opinions about Christianity, but the Holy Spirit was always my teacher. Another work that God did in me was to give me hunger and thirst for righteousness and holiness. I had a hunger to be “clean” in His character. Of course, we struggle with that issue, but as long as our hunger is strong, God is pleased.

I believe the reason that I was filled with the Holy Spirit the very day of my salvation is because Jesus revealed Himself to me as the Glorified One. I had been reading the Book of Revelation and a book having to do with Revelation, and I saw Jesus in His glorified state, not as the person before the Cross, or the person in the grave, or even as a resurrected person, but I saw the Jesus who had already ascended to the right hand of God in Heaven.

**John 7:39** says,

*39 “But this He spoke concerning the Spirit, whom those believing in Him would receive; for the Holy Spirit was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified.”*

***I cannot explain everything about the Holy Spirit of God.***

I do not understand the various ways the Holy Spirit is experienced by different people. But there are a few simple things that I can share with you.

***In order to be a child of God, you need to have His Spirit joined to your spirit.***

That is what happened when you were re-born. You were joined to God, much in the same way as Adam was before he rebelled against God.

**1 Corinthians 6:19** says,

*19 “Or do you not know that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit who is in you, whom you have from God, and you are not your own?”*

***You became a container for the Holy Spirit when you made Jesus Lord.***

Jesus said that the Holy Spirit would come after He (Jesus) ascended back to Heaven to take His (Jesus’) place here on earth.

Knowing how we could feel fatherless if we could not experience His presence, Jesus said the following, “I will not leave you as orphans [fatherless]; I will come to you” (John 14:18).

He told His disciples, after His resurrection but before He ascended, that they would be immersed into the Holy Spirit.

**Acts 1:5 says,**

*5 “for John truly baptized with water, but you shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit not many days from now.”*

**Acts 1:8 says,**

*8 “But you shall receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you; and you shall be witnesses to Me in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the end of the earth.”*

***He told them not to worry after He left.***

He explained that the Holy Spirit would take His place and make Him (Jesus, God) real to them. Read what Jesus told them in John 14:16-26.

***Jesus told them that the Holy Spirit would make Him real to them.***

**John 15:26 says,**

*26 “But when the Helper comes, whom I shall send to you from the Father, the Spirit of truth who proceeds from the Father, He will testify of Me.”*

**John 16:7 says,**

*7 “Nevertheless I tell you the truth. It is to your advantage that I go away; for if I do not go away, the Helper will not come to you; but if I depart, I will send Him to you.”*

***Jesus told His men that He would come back soon.***

He did! He came back in the form of the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit and Jesus are not different people; they are the same,



but in different form. The Holy Spirit can actually dwell inside humans, where Jesus was restricted to one human body.

***That sounds simple, but the devil has convinced men and women to complicate things.***

Entire denominational structures have been built around what people believe or do not believe about the Holy Spirit. Often what people believe is some sort of tradition that is not even Bible-based.

**How does this filling happen?**

***John 15 says that we are connected to our source like a branch on a vine.***

We are not independent containers like a water glass that must be filled from an outside source.

***It is a matter of staying connected to the vine.***

The sap in the vine represents the Holy Spirit, Jesus is the vine, and we are the branches. We need to abide in the vine. Jesus says that obedience to His Word is what keeps us abiding. The Baptism in the Holy Spirit is being flooded with God when we are connected to Him, as the vine is to the branch. His “sap” flows into us and we stay connected if we abide.

I submit that we become flooded or filled with the Holy Spirit when the various obstructions, in the connection between the branch and the vine, are removed.

***Are there degrees of being filled?***

I submit that there *are* degrees. When you are full of the Holy Spirit, all areas of your life will begin to be changed. The fruit of the Spirit will begin to be manifested in your life.

**Galatians 5:22-23 says,**

22 *“But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, kindness, goodness, faithfulness,*

23 *gentleness, self-control. Against such there is no law.”*

**You will be hungry for the Word of God.**

Jesus will be real to you. Christianity will be more than a mental understanding; it will be alive and real. You will know that you are in relationship with God.

Ideally, every Christian would be filled with the Holy Spirit when they are born again. Sometimes it happens like that (as it did with me), but not always. The New Testament shows different experiences. At Ephesus, Paul encountered a group who had believed, but who had not even heard of the Holy Spirit.

**Acts 19:6 says,**

*6 “And when Paul had laid hands on them, the Holy Spirit came upon them, and they spoke with tongues and prophesied.”*

Another incident took place while Peter was preaching the Gospel to the Gentiles.

**Acts 10:44-46 says,**

*44 “While Peter was still speaking these words, the Holy Spirit fell upon all those who heard the word.*

*45 And those of the circumcision who believed were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because the gift of the Holy Spirit had been poured out on the Gentiles also.*

*46 For they heard them speak with tongues and magnify God...”*

Paul prayed a blessing for the church in Ephesus. He wanted them to experience the reality of God in their present day lives, “...experience for themselves the love of Christ, which far surpasses mere knowledge, without experience, that they may be a body wholly filled and flooded with God Himself” (Ephesians 3:19, extracted from Amplified Bible).

**I believe that a lot of obstructions can keep us from the fullness of the Holy Spirit.**

**The major obstructions are:**

- Pride (James 4:6)
- Religious tradition (Mark 7:13)
- Fear (Luke 11:11-13)
- Doubt (Luke 11:9-10)

- Inadequacy (Luke 11:13)

**Other big obstructions are:**

- Not wholly submitting your will to God.
- Refusing to give up some sin in your life.
- Not living in obedience to the Word of God.
- Not addressing spiritual and demonic strongholds in your life.
- Going to “other gods” to obtain your needs.

***I believe that the simplicity of the whole matter is this.***

You can become confused if you study and debate modern denominations and their theology about the baptism in the Holy Spirit. That type of debate has proven to be quite unprofitable. However, you can simply look at the original intelligent design of Adam, as described in the second paragraph in this chapter, which says, “What is normal? A human vessel created by God from the dust of the earth, made in His image, and filled with His Spirit.”

Then look at what caused God to “move out.” God moved out of Adam because of disobedience and the desire for independence. That being true, then what will invite God to move back in with His fullness? Obedience and our hunger for dependence upon God.

**Acts 5:32 says,**

*32 “And we are His witnesses to these things, and so also is the Holy Spirit whom God has given to those who obey Him.”*

The following is a quote from Watchman Nee from his book, *A Table in the Wilderness*.<sup>21</sup>

*“When the vessels were full... she said unto her son, Bring me yet a vessel. And he said unto her, There is not a vessel more. And the oil stayed” (2 Kings 4:6).*

---

<sup>21</sup> Nee, Watchman, *A Table in the Wilderness*. Tyndale House Publishers. Wheaton, IL, 1978, Devotion from April 18.

*The divine almightiness is content to confine itself to our capacity. The oil of God's Spirit flows according to the measure man has prepared for God. Divine blessing is subject to the limits of human channels. "Make this valley full of ditches," said Elisha on another occasion. "For thus saith the Lord, Ye shall not see wind, neither shall ye see rain, yet that valley shall be filled with water.... And this is but a light thing in the sight of the Lord: he will also deliver the Moabites into your hand" (3:16-18). Man has not the power to obtain anything more than God has given, but he has the option of taking less. "Ye will not come to me that ye may have life."*

***Ask God to show you what may apply to you.***

**The Holy Spirit desires to do two fundamental things in your life:**

**1. To make Jesus real to you so that He (Jesus) can make you whole.**

He wants to set you free from past bondages and prisons. He wants to make you holy like God.

**2. To make Jesus real to the world through you.**

In other words, to glorify or reveal God. Jesus' only body on this earth is the Church. The Church is His body. We represent Him to the world in the same way that He represented the Father to the world when He was here. You are part of His body, the Church.

**What about the gifts of the Spirit?**

Please study 1 Corinthians 12, Romans 12, and Ephesians 4. One type of gift is part of our personality, and other types are given to operate in special situations as determined by God. I have personally had many of the gifts operate in my life from time to time, but not all of them. I have witnessed gifts such as the word of prophecy and the word of wisdom that only the Holy Spirit could have spoken. My wife and I have participated with

the Holy Spirit in casting out demons, and we have seen the results of people being healed and set free.

I do not feel it is proper for people who have received the gifts to make those who have not received them feel as if there is something wrong with them. Neither is it proper for those who have not received the gifts to criticize those who have; that is criticizing God!

***Speaking in tongues is a valuable and powerful gift.***

I believe that God does not give every believer the gift of tongues to use publicly. However, I do believe that the gift of speaking in tongues, praying in the Spirit, is a very powerful gift for all believers to utilize in their private prayer time.

**Matthew 12:34b says,**

*34b "...For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks."*

**If your heart is full of the Holy Spirit, why not let Him spill out of your mouth?**

He will pray the perfect will of God for your life and for the lives of others whom God decides to bless.

God uses it not only in public ministry, but more importantly, He uses it to take control of our mind for His benefit. James 3:4-5 says that the tongue is like the rudder that guides the entire ship. Science has shown that the speech center in your brain controls the entire brain. If you want to give Jesus the rudder of your life, you should give Him your tongue. It will renew your mind, pray the perfect will of God, and resist Satan. Praying in tongues privately for extended periods of time is powerful. It has produced miracles in my life. Far too many Christians have not enjoyed the benefits of this gift due to ignorance. There is a more in depth teaching on the Holy Spirit in the ISOB curriculum, lessons 117 and 118.<sup>22</sup>

One time, early in my walk with God, I took a Jewish friend to church with me (he asked me, I did not pressure him). During

---

<sup>22</sup> <http://www.isob-bible.org/bible-lessons/503-grow-or-die-lessons-who-god-is>

the service, the person right behind us was prompted by the Holy Spirit to speak out in tongues. My friend turned and stared at him while he spoke. Later, my Jewish friend invited Jesus to become His Lord. He saw Him as the Jewish Messiah.

On the way home he asked me about the “funny language” this man spoke. I explained 1 Corinthians chapter 12 to him. Then he told me that he understood what the man had said in Hebrew and that he had learned it in Hebrew school as a young boy. Here is what my Jewish friend heard that morning:

“Now it shall come to pass in the latter days... Many people shall come and say, ‘Come, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, to the house of the God of Jacob; He will teach us His ways, and we shall walk in His paths.’ For out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem...They shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning hooks ” (taken from Isaiah 2:2-5).

However, wholesome speech in your native language is more important to God. Your words are much more powerful than you can imagine. What you say will not only tend to cause things to happen on earth, but your words will tend to bind the underlying thoughts to your mind forever. Negative words will put you and others into darkness. Positive and God-controlled words will set you and others free. You will experience a peace that is much like Heaven in your heart. Negative words will put “Hell” into your heart.

**Ask God to show you what areas in your life are keeping the fullness of the Holy Spirit from being manifested in and through you.**

The presence of God through the Holy Spirit is worth any adjustment you may need to make.

**Prayer.**

“Lord Jesus, the Word of God says that You have a desire to fill me with Your Spirit so that You and I can be more intimate. I am hungry for You and Your presence in my life. Jesus, I believe Your Word. I confess to You that I want everything You have for me. Come, Jesus, baptize me with the Holy Spirit and

fire. I am open and ready for the fire in my life. I renounce and repent from all sin in my life. I forgive everyone who has wronged me. I offer myself to You a living sacrifice. You are sovereign over my life. Have Your way. I offer to You all of my members, my mouth, my tongue, my hands, feet, ears and eyes. **Take it all!”**

For more information on this subject, read Chapter 11 of the book Grow or Die. The reference is on the second page of this book.

*Reproduction, resale or internet posting prohibited*

## Chapter 20

### The Blood Shed by Jesus for Healing

#### Healing For Our Whole Person

**Jesus' blood was shed so we could receive healing: spiritual (spirit), emotional (soul), and physical (body).**

Broken relationships are the primary cause for our inner wounds. Most people, even Christians, attempt to “medicate” their inner wounds with vain and empty schemes. Often it is drugs, alcohol, food, pursuit of a perfect mate who can make one “happy,” pursuit of success and money or power, and the list goes on. We need to understand that working on the “fruit” of our wounds won't heal them until we allow God to cut out the bad “roots.” These types of inner wounds can make us physically sick.

The only way that God, Who is love, could have a love relationship with the “apple of His eye,” you and me, was to turn His back on His Son, Jesus, actually God Himself, and allow Him to suffer the penalty and consequence of our broken relationships, especially the relationship with God Himself. This horrible shedding of blood and the turning of God's back on Jesus is what bought our well-being, our healing, and our total restoration of our spirit, soul, and body.

I'm going to challenge you with a question at the very beginning of this chapter, which you may not be able to answer until the later part of the chapter.

*What was God's primary purpose in providing healing for your body, soul, and spirit?*

#### **Healing of our soul.**

1 Peter 1:9-10 speaks about a mystery that the Old Testament prophets had wondered about, that being the salvation of a person's soul.

**1 Peter 1:9-10 says,**

*9 “receiving the end of your faith – the salvation of your souls.*

*10 Of this salvation the prophets have inquired and searched carefully, who prophesied of the grace that would come to you.”*



Soul salvation means the well-being and the healing of and total restoration of the human mind, will, and emotions. Jesus' blood was shed for this salvation.

**3 John 1:2 says,**

*2 “Beloved, I pray that you may prosper in all things and be in health, just as your soul prospers.”*

In other words, when your soul prospers and is healed, all the other areas of your life will begin to line up with godly prosperity. God, in my opinion, prefers to bless from the inside out. Ephesians 3:20 says that God's power will work *in us*.

**Ephesians 3:20 says,**

*20 “Now to Him who is able to do exceedingly abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that works in us.”*

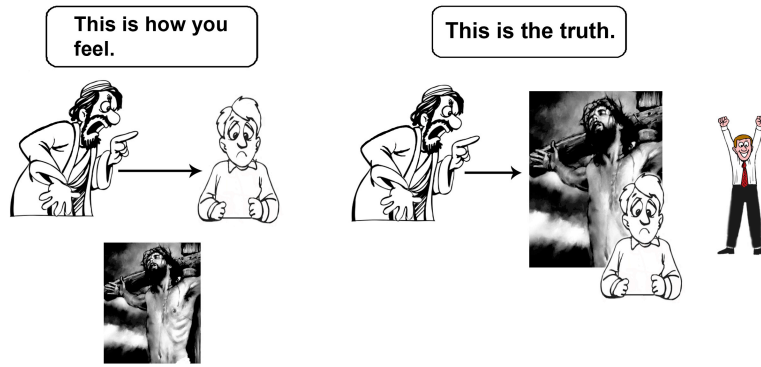
**The first key to inner healing is forgiveness.**

While there are many and varied ingredients to the healing of our soul, there is one major ingredient that reigns over all the others, that is forgiveness. I go into a more exhaustive process of inner healing in my book Free To Be You.<sup>23</sup>

Many people misunderstand real forgiveness. Forgiveness is not excusing a sin, abuse, or offense. Real forgiveness is simply agreeing with God, through the Word of God, that the sin was borne by Jesus and not by you or any other person who may have offended you. Once you see and agree with that truth, you are on a path to be free. Also, forgiveness runs in several directions. First, we must realize that God forgives us as we live this life and stumble from time to time. 1 John 1:9 confirms that when we agree with God (confession) that we have sinned, at that moment we are cleansed from all unrighteousness. Next, we of course must forgive others. And finally, we must forgive ourselves. Without all three of these, we will remain in the bondage of our inner wounds.

---

<sup>23</sup> <https://www.createspace.com/3418569>



This is a picture of forgiveness for what others have done to you. Jesus bore all the abuse and sin that struck you!

**Jesus shed blood seven times.**<sup>24</sup>

The Hebrew Scriptures foretold of this perfection. We have studied the Hebrew Scriptures for types and shadows of the Blood Covenant, now in this chapter we will see how Jesus, the spotless and perfect Lamb of God, is the consummation of the Covenant.

**Leviticus 16:14, 19 says,**

14 *“He shall take some of the blood of the bull and sprinkle it with his finger on the mercy seat on the east side; and before the mercy seat he shall sprinkle some of the blood with his finger seven times.”*

19 *“Then he shall sprinkle some of the blood on it with his finger seven times, cleanse it, and consecrate it from the uncleanness of the children of Israel.”*

**1. He shed blood in Gethsemane.** In Gethsemane, Jesus facing the worst death and torture gave up His will for God’s will. He purchased back our rebellious will. He was wounded for our transgressions (Isaiah 53:5). Our rebellious will has with it the fruit, or result, of being profane. He shed blood over His will to pay for our rebellious will (*rebellion, disobedience*).

---

<sup>24</sup> Ideas and some text taken from *Free At Last* by author Larry Hutch. Published by Larry Hutch Ministries, Portland, OR.

**2. He shed blood at the whipping post.** We were redeemed from the curse of disease and sickness “and with his stripes we are healed” (Isaiah 53:5, KJV) (*physical healing*).

**3. He shed blood with the crown of thorns on His head.** We were redeemed from the curse of *poverty*. When Adam and Eve sinned, they no longer enjoyed God’s prosperity, but rather thorns came up in their garden.

**Genesis 3:17-18 says,**

17 “Then to Adam He said, ‘Because you have heeded the voice of your wife, and have eaten from the tree of which I commanded you, saying, ‘You shall not eat of it’: Cursed is the ground for your sake; In toil you shall eat of it all the days of your life. Both thorns and thistles it shall bring forth for you, and you shall eat the herb of the field.’”

**Matthew 27:29 says,**

29 “When they had twisted a crown of thorns, they put it on His head, and a reed in His right hand. And they bowed the knee before Him and mocked Him, saying, ‘Hail, King of the Jews!’”

**4. He shed blood in His hands** (*dominion over the things we touch*).

**Psalms 22:16 says,**

16 “For dogs have surrounded Me; The congregation of the wicked has enclosed Me. They pierced My hands and My feet.”

When Jesus was crucified they drove spikes into His hands. When God created Adam and Eve, He placed all authority into their hands. Satan took that authority, but Jesus has purchased it back for us. Adam was to listen to the Word of God, fellowship with Him, and then exercise the authority, that resulted from that fellowship, and rule. Any other doctrine about authority in Christ is, in my view, off target.

**Psalm 8:4-7 says,**

4 “What is man that You are mindful of him, and the son of man that You visit him?”

5 For You have made him a little lower than the angels [actual word means God], and You have crowned him with glory and honor.

6 You have made him to have dominion over the works of Your hands; You have put all things under his feet,

7 All sheep and oxen – Even the beasts of the field.”

**Mark 16:18 says,**

18 “[T]hey will take up serpents; and if they drink anything deadly, it will by no means hurt them; they will lay hands on the sick, and they will recover.”

**5. He shed blood in His feet (defeat of Satan).** Jesus’ feet were nailed to the cross. This has many aspects of importance. First, we were people who were walking the wrong path of life, and Jesus’ sacrifice gives His obedient believers the opportunity to walk the path, which is their appointed destiny and purpose for life. This is also a dominion and authority issue.

**Deuteronomy 11:24a says,**

24 “Every place on which the sole of your foot treads shall be yours...”

**6. He shed blood in His pierced heart (rejection).** Very often rejection, especially during our childhood, is the root of most inner wounds. Rejection is very often the cause of many unexplained negative issues in our lives. Rejection destroys joy and causes a “broken heart.”

**Jesus won back our joy by taking our rejection on Himself.**

**Matthew 27:46 says,**

46 “And about the ninth hour Jesus cried out with a loud voice, saying, ‘Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani?’ that is, ‘My God, My God, why have You forsaken Me?’”

***Jesus died of a broken heart.***

**John 19:34 (KJV) says,**

*34 “But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.”*

Jesus was crucified on the day before a Sabbath and Jewish law demanded that no one could be on a cross on the Sabbath. To comply with this the soldiers went to each of the crucified to break their legs in order to hasten their death. The Scriptures had prophesied that no bone in the Messiah’s body would be broken (Psalm 34:20). There are other Scriptures that imply that the bones of a righteous person would not be broken. There was no need to break Jesus’ legs because they found He was already dead. He had died of a broken heart, which was indicated medically when after piercing His heart, both water and blood flowed out separately (I am told that this is a medical sign that the tissue separating the water from the blood had ruptured).

Healing our broken hearts was one of Jesus’ primary missions.

**Luke 4:18 (KJV) says,**

*18 “The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised.”*

***7. He shed blood in His inner bruises. He was bruised to bring us deliverance from inner hurts and iniquities.*** If you have a bruise on your body it means that you are bleeding from the inside. Not only was He wounded for our outer transgressions, but He was also bruised for our iniquities (generational curses) (see the definition in “*Definitions from Isaiah 53*” which is in the last chapter of this book).

**Isaiah 53:5 (KJV) says,**

*5 “But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our*

*peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed.”*

The word **‘iniquities’** means **‘a spirit that tries to break us down.’**

It is a spiritual force on the inside that pressures us to bow or bend under its destructive nature. These are also known as “generational curses” as we sometimes talk about them. They are the wounds, bruises, and sins perpetrated or suffered by our forefathers.

***Exodus 34:5-8 says that curses are passed down to future generations.***

**Exodus 34:7 says,**

*7 “Keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity and transgression and sin, by no means clearing the guilty, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children and the children’s children to the third and the fourth generation.”*

The solution is not to struggle against our iniquities or those things that attempt to defeat us from the inside, but to cooperate with God and believe His Word that He indeed did bear them. Notice that in the Exodus 34 God said that He both forgives iniquity and, at the same time, He visits the iniquity down to the fourth generation. This sounds like a paradox until you see that God can only forgive by visiting the iniquity upon His Son Jesus in your place. This is called forgiveness, and it is possible only because the relationship between God the Father and Jesus the Son was broken at the cross.

#### ***8. The main point.***

The seven points I listed above for which Jesus shed His blood is a good beginning in understanding our potential healing. However, I submit that the greatest thing for which Jesus shed His blood was so that we could become clean vessels qualified to receive the life of God in us. If we allow His life to prevail in us, inner healing will take place.

**Hang on to the promise, no matter what the circumstances are.**

In Genesis chapter 15 God put Abram to sleep while the two burning figures of Deity walked through the blood covenant ditch. That time of intense darkness comes upon many of us when we do not understand what is going on. During this time all we need to see in our darkness is what the Holy Spirit will illuminate, and that is the emblem of the covenant. There are times when all we need to hang onto is the sacrificial death of the Lord Jesus Christ! There are times when it may be difficult to discipline our minds to believe what is written in this chapter. During those times, keep the emblem of the covenant on the video screen of your mind.

When one of my family members was in a serious life and death surgery, all I could do for six hours was to see the serpent on the brazen pole in the Wilderness, being a type of Jesus on the Cross for our healing.

**Numbers 21:9 says,**

*9 “So Moses made a bronze serpent, and put it on a pole; and so it was, if a serpent had bitten anyone, when he looked at the bronze serpent, he lived.”*

The serpent on the brazen pole is still the symbol used by the medical profession for healing.

*Reproduction, resale or internet posting prohibited*

**This is a great story showing how Jesus heals from the inside out.**

***Jesus performed a miracle as recorded in Mark chapter 2 that, I believe, tells that story better than any theology.***

**Mark 2:1-12 says,**



1 “And again He entered Capernaum after some days, and it was heard that He was in the house.

2 Immediately many gathered together, so that there was no longer room to receive them, not even near the door. And He preached the word to them.

3 Then they came to Him, bringing a paralytic who was carried by four

men.

4 And when they could not come near Him because of the crowd, they uncovered the roof where He was. So when they had broken through, they let down the bed on which the paralytic was lying.

5 When Jesus saw their faith, He said to the paralytic, ‘Son, your sins are forgiven you.’

6 And some of the scribes were sitting there and reasoning in their hearts,

7 ‘Why does this Man speak blasphemies like this? Who can forgive sins but God alone?’

8 But immediately, when Jesus perceived in His spirit that they reasoned thus within themselves, He said to them, ‘Why do you reason about these things in your hearts?’



9 Which is easier, to say to the paralytic, 'Your sins are forgiven you,' or to say, 'Arise, take up your bed and walk'?

10 But that you may know that the Son of Man has power on earth to forgive sins' – He said to the paralytic,

11 'I say to you, arise, take up your bed, and go to your house.'

12 Immediately he arose, took up the bed, and went out in the presence of them all, so that all were amazed and glorified God, saying, 'We never saw anything like this!'"

**Notice in verse 5 above, that Jesus said, "Son."**

The word "son" in Greek is *teknon*, which carries this meaning: "You who have been begotten by a father and family but have no relationship with either." Notice, this man's family did not bring him to Jesus, but four men who had faith. I believe that is a picture of a real church, using their faith to bring paralyzed people to Jesus. *Teknon* does not necessarily mean there is no relationship, it simply means one who has been begotten. I believe the implication by Jesus was as I have stated. There are other words Jesus could have used.

You may not be paralyzed in body, but maybe in spirit or in lifestyle. Maybe you are paralyzed to stop drugs. Maybe you are overeating to medicate the emptiness in your relationships; maybe you are doing destructive things to your body like cutting or other such painful acts. Maybe you cannot stop inordinate sex, porno, anger, depression and the list goes on. Your external paralysis has an inner cure for which Jesus paid the ultimate price.

Then Jesus said, "your sins are forgiven you." In other words, Jesus said that the iniquities that have cut off your father-son and family relationship were borne by Him. Forgive means to cut away and take away. That rejection and relationship void that had made this man paralyzed has been borne by Jesus at the Cross. Jesus could have just as easily said, "Son, I am going to the cross in a few years and there My Daddy will turn His head

and reject Me, so that this sin you have endured will be forgiven and taken away from you.”

Isaiah 53:5 says that Jesus was bruised for our iniquities. Iniquities are inner wounds, and so are bruises inner wounds. Our inner wounds were borne by Jesus’ inner wounds.

**Jeremiah 31:29-30 says,**

*29 “In those days they shall say no more: ‘The fathers have eaten sour grapes, and the children’s teeth are set on edge.’*

*30 But every one shall die for his own iniquity; every man who eats the sour grapes, his teeth shall be set on edge.”*

In other words, in the New Covenant, Jesus will absorb that which could not be absorbed in the Old Covenant.

Look what happened! “Immediately he arose, took up the bed, and went out in the presence of them all, so that all were amazed and glorified God, saying, ‘We never saw anything like this!’” (Mark 2:12).

***To glorify God means to reveal who He is to others. Does this answer my question at the beginning of this chapter?***

If we kept our eyes more on glorifying God and less on our own needs, I believe, that it would be much more pleasing to Him.

When you allow Jesus to go down deep and forgive those things done to you, or perhaps issues that were iniquities and were passed down to you by forefathers, and you agree with Him to issue that forgiveness, then your outer issues will be healed. Perhaps understanding this bigger picture about forgiveness will make it easier for you to forgive those who have hurt you or who have passed down iniquities. The whole purpose is to glorify God, or to reveal Him to a lost world.

**Healing (sometimes) starts from the inside and works its way out.**

Remember our Scripture in 3 John and how God wants us to prosper to the same degree our soul is prospering. However, we need to submit ourselves to God for this inner healing.

Please note, that my emphasis on inner healing in this chapter in no way is meant to minimize Jesus' great power and desire to work miracle healings for our bodies that perhaps are not directly related to an inner healing.

There are ways in which we can cooperate with the Holy Spirit to allow Him to get down deep, underneath all of layers of "onion peels" to our inner wounds, and we will cover those in later chapters.

**The Passover Blood and the Israelite's response.**

This chapter, and indeed this entire book, discusses the Blood of the Everlasting Covenant, or the blood of Jesus shed for us. Often we are required to cooperate with this offer of the Blood Covenant, as did the Israelites just before their exodus from Egypt.

Remember, they were told to kill a lamb, a perfect lamb without blemish, and to sprinkle its blood on the doorposts of their homes. That would protect them from the "death angel" that was coming to destroy all the first born in Egypt. However, the Israelites were also told to roast and eat the lamb, add unleavened bread and bitter herbs with the meal, and to do all of this girded up to leave Egypt.

To eat the Lamb indicates that not only are we forgiven by the blood, but that the blood also cleansed us so that the life of God can dwell in us. As we "eat" the Word, which is Jesus, we awaken the life of God in us. It may have already been there since you were born-again, but unless you feed on the Word, your wrong thinking will cause the life to be ineffective.

Unleavened bread indicates forsaking the sin in your life. We cannot be perfect, but we can be perfectly repentant. Bitter herbs represent the bitterness of what the Lamb Jesus went through. Being girded up to leave Egypt means that you need to depart quickly from the "world's system," Egypt, Exodus chapter 12.

This statement in no way is intended to indicate that healing is totally conditional on our response. I do feel, however, that inner healing, the healing of the soul as we discussed, is

conditional to our response as shown as a type and shadow in the historic Passover.

***Physical healing.***

I do believe that we are to believe God for His physical healing offered freely. I do not believe that physical healing always follows the conditions I wrote about in the above paragraph. Just recently I heard a marvelous testimony from a friend of mine. When his Hindu landlord came with a lease for him to sign for a shopping center space, he noticed that the landlord was limping and in great pain. As my friend and his associate spoke to the landlord about Jesus, the power of God hit the room. Right then my friend prayed for the landlord, and he was instantly healed. I read an email that the landlord wrote to my friend the next day, he was awestruck and was now experiencing no pain and was totally healed.

On the flip side, many great men and women of God wonder why God has not yet given them the gift of physical healing. While I do not understand everything, I do know that many of these precious saints know about the resurrection power of God within them, and are turning the curse into a blessing for many. They, like me, believe in Colossians 1:20, which says,

**Colossians 1:20,**

*20 “and by Him to reconcile all things to Himself, by Him, whether things on earth or things in heaven, having made peace through the blood of His cross.”*

To reconcile means to make a friend of something that was previously an enemy, much in the way that Jesus made a friend from the horrible torture and His death. The resurrection power operating in someone’s life will bring glory to God.

**Chapter 21**  
**The Lion of the Tribe of Judah**  
The Blood changes our curses into blessings!

I have had prophetic dreams in my life; however, they are not an everyday event with me. Just as I was finishing the proofing and the final edit of this book, God gave me a prophetic dream.

In my dream, I was in my home, and I saw my wife invite a lion into our home. It truly gave me fear. I felt as if this lion could and would destroy me. The lion simply walked around peacefully. The fear continued to grip me. I was attempting to appease him.

Then the lion approached me and stood up on his back legs. He placed his front feet on my shoulder, which brought his face right up to my face. The fear was intense! I put my hand on his nose and said, "Good boy, good boy." His face became very friendly, but my fear continued. I was just glad that I was not being eaten alive!

My wife and I laughed about this dream for the entire morning. Then, about noon, the Lord spoke to me about the dream and tears flowed down my face, as I understood it.

I do not feel adequate to write about what the Lord said, but I will attempt it. I pray that the Holy Spirit does the translation for you, the reader.

**Revelation 5:1-5** says,

*1 "And I saw in the right hand of Him who sat on the throne, a scroll written inside and on the back, sealed with seven seals.*

*2 Then I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, 'Who is worthy to open the scroll and to loose its seals?'*

*3 And no one in heaven or on the earth or under the earth was able to open the scroll or to look at it.*

*4 So I wept much, because no one was found worthy to open and read the scroll, or to look at it.*

*5 But one of the elders said to me, 'Do not weep. Behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, has prevailed to open the scroll and to loose its seven seals.'*"

**We know that Jesus is the Lion of the tribe of Judah.**

John was sad and was weeping because he did not see anybody worthy to open the Scroll. Then an elder told him that Lion of the tribe of Judah had prevailed, or overcome, and that He indeed was worthy.

***The Scroll is the curse as shown in the Book of Zechariah.***

It is also our rightful inheritance and Satan's rightful inheritance. It represents the curse turned into a blessing for us, and final judgment on Satan. That is why John wept, because he did not see anyone who was worthy to perform this miracle, the miracle of turning our curses into blessings and watching Satan receive his due punishment.

***Hal Lindsey has a very important historic view on the Scroll.***

*"Sealing a scroll was a common and important practice in Biblical times. The wills of both Emperor Vespasian and Caesar Augustus were secured with seven seals.*

*For such a document, a scribe would procure a long roll of parchment and begin writing. After a period of writing he would stop, roll the parchment enough to cover his words and seal the scroll at that point with wax. Then he would resume writing, stop again, roll the scroll, and add another seal. By the time he was finished, he would have sealed the scroll seven times. The scrolls would be read a section at a time, after each seal was opened.*

*Why was this process used? Evidently it was to prevent unauthorized persons from tampering with the scroll or reading and revealing its contents. Only a "worthy" person – that is, someone with proper authority – could have legal access to the scroll's message.*

*When a Jewish family was required to forfeit its land and possessions through some distress, the property could not be permanently taken from them. Their losses were listed in a scroll and sealed seven*

*times, then the conditions necessary to purchase back the land and possessions were written on the outside of the scroll. When a qualified redeemer could be found to meet the requirements of reclamation, the one to whom the property had been forfeited was obligated to return the possessions to the original owner."*

*(There's A New World Coming, Hal Lindsey<sup>25</sup>)*

**This is the book I was reading in 1979 when the Lord saved me!**

**Revelation 5:6 says,**

*6 "And I looked, and behold, in the midst of the throne and of the four living creatures, and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb as though it had been slain, having seven horns and seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits of God sent out into all the earth."*

***Notice, when John looked, he did not see the Lion of the tribe of Judah, rather he saw the Lamb. The Lamb had become the Lion because He had overcome. The Lion and the Lamb were one.***

**Revelation 5:7-14 says,**

*7 "Then He came and took the scroll out of the right hand of Him who sat on the throne.*

*8 Now when He had taken the scroll, the four living creatures and the twenty-four elders fell down before the Lamb, each having a harp, and golden bowls full of incense, which are the prayers of the saints.*

*9 And they sang a new song, saying: 'You are worthy to take the scroll, and to open its seals; for You were slain, and have redeemed us to God by Your*

---

<sup>25</sup> [http://www.amazon.com/Theres-New-World-Coming-Depth/dp/0890814406/ref=sr\\_1\\_4?s=books&ie=UTF8&qid=1306765327&sr=1-4](http://www.amazon.com/Theres-New-World-Coming-Depth/dp/0890814406/ref=sr_1_4?s=books&ie=UTF8&qid=1306765327&sr=1-4)

*blood out of every tribe and tongue and people and nation,*

*10 And have made us kings and priests to our God; and we shall reign on the earth.'*

*11 Then I looked, and I heard the voice of many angels around the throne, the living creatures, and the elders; and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands,*

*12 saying with a loud voice: 'Worthy is the Lamb who was slain to receive power and riches and wisdom, and strength and honor and glory and blessing!'*

*13 And every creature which is in heaven and on the earth and under the earth and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, I heard saying: 'Blessing and honor and glory and power be to Him who sits on the throne, and to the Lamb, forever and ever!'*

*14 Then the four living creatures said, 'Amen!' And the twenty-four elders fell down and worshiped Him who lives forever and ever."*

***Anytime we look a lion in the face, we are likely to have fear.***

I sensed the evil in my dream, but at the same time the lion did not harm me. I believe the evil I sensed was all the evil that this Lamb/Lion had "digested." The Lamb had digested the evil, and He had converted the evil into a blessing. This process of overcoming had created a Lion who now rules.

However, this overcoming required the very blood of Jesus, the Creator. This is the blood of the everlasting covenant.

**You can choose how to respond to suffering. Let the Lamb digest the evil in your life.**

*"There is a very ancient teaching that if you know the right name of anything, you will have the power to control it; but if you call it by a wrong name, you give that thing power over you. Bringing this into a totally*



*Christian perspective, those circumstances, people, or situations we call and see as “bad” will indeed be bad experiences for us. Our reactions to life’s problems are the key. If we can see a nuisance as an opportunity to practice heavenly reactions, be certain of this, heavenly results will blossom from it.”*<sup>26</sup>

The overcoming process will do this for you! It will give you a share in the Lion’s dominion over your curses and over Satan. Why allow Satan any victory? You can win every time by allowing Jesus to do the overcoming. You may not win in your definition, but you certainly will win according to God’s definition. And when you go to be with the Lord, what will be important? Of course, this type of victory is only possible if you live the “overcoming lifestyle.”

Allow the Lion spirit to rise up within you through overcoming so that you may help others. How? Through the overcoming lifestyle that is embedded in the Book of Revelation.

**Revelation 12:11 says,**

*11 “And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony, and they did not love their lives to the death.”*

**Revelation reveals more than you think!**

I believe that there are multiple messages in the Book of Revelation, and the one I am describing here is certainly not the only message.

I am going to look at Revelation from a different point of view than many are accustomed to. I am going to use it in the same way that God has used it in my life. God has used it for me as a present day devotion; something practical to show me what is going on in the spiritual world as I am overcoming. This is not so much my theology as it is my personal testimony and experience. Dr. Mark Rutland, president of Global Servants,

---

<sup>26</sup> Hurnard, Hannah, *Walking Among The Unseen*. Tyndale House Publishers, Inc, Wheaton, IL, 1977, page 172.

former president of Southeastern University, and as of 2011, president of Oral Roberts University, says that Revelation is more like a Hebrew opera, a drama with music and poetry, than a theological textbook. I am not saying that Revelation does not have to do with future world history, but I am saying that there is more than that. It applies to your current history as well.

***We have often used the term “Junk to Jewels.”***

How does this happen? What happened in the process of junk becoming jewels? At the end of the Book of Revelation we see the Kingdom of God with a foundation of jewels. During the events described in the middle of the book we see the suffering John, and ourselves, overcoming and turning our junk into those jewels.

John was suffering on the isle of Patmos (definition: my killing – a rugged and bare island in the Aegean Sea). He had ministered with Jesus; he was His closest friend at one time. Jesus entrusted His mother to John at the Cross. John saw Jesus for many days after His resurrection. John had a powerful ministry during the early church days, starting with the coming of the Holy Spirit at Pentecost. He, as an elder, wrote His precious epistles in an effort to get people back to basics, a relationship with Jesus.

Imagine how John must have felt now that he was a prisoner on barren island of Patmos. He was carrying rocks from a quarry up and down the hills as his daily work task. Perhaps he was wondering: “Jesus, what is going on? Peter is crucified, James is beheaded, the church is persecuted and in shambles, and things do not look good. What is this all about?” Have you ever felt like John?

Then suddenly, on one Lord’s day, “Bang.” He sees Jesus in all of His glory, but not like he had known Him before. Jesus was so on fire and powerful looking that John fell at His feet as dead (Revelation 1:9-18). Read it.

***The mystery of afflictions.***

Not only did Jesus want to make some sense out of John’s affliction and the affliction of the church in those days, but also He had John write the Book of Revelation so that you and I could make some godly sense out of our afflictions. He wants us to

know that He has not deserted us, but that He is on task wanting to turn our junk into jewels.

Jesus started out by revealing Himself to John as the One in control, and as the Judge. Jesus also revealed to John who he was, and who you and I are, that is kings and priests. We are destined to rule and reign and to be the bridge between lost mankind and God.

Then, in chapters 2 and 3, the church is told that they need to get their lives cleaned up because they are about to go to war and overcome. A soldier with a rusty rifle and a broken helmet cannot be victorious. You should study these two chapters to see if God is speaking to you about your own life.

***The open door.***

Then, in Revelation chapter 4, John sees a door opened in Heaven and he hears the voice, “Come up here.” We need to obtain God’s view of our circumstances so we can see them as He sees them. John noticed that he was in a courtroom; he saw God the Judge, he saw the Throne, and he saw a rainbow as a covenant promise.

The word “throne” used here in Revelation chapter 4 means a tribunal bench used for judges. God is now on the throne as a judge! There are multitudes of other examples showing God to be the judge. Some might say, ‘Oh, the Book of Revelation, and the judgment therein, is for some future time in history.’ Well, it might be, but it is also in the now! We have the right to bring the Kingdom of God to earth now! I personally have experienced these kinds of judgments!

***The Scroll.***

In chapter 5 John saw the Scroll in God’s right hand. The Scroll is the curse of the entire human race and for you and for me personally (Zechariah 5:3). Jesus unrolls the Scroll one seal at a time confirming the price He paid for our bondage to sin and curses. He is the only one worthy to do this. John wept because he thought that nobody would be worthy.

Then John heard the song.

**Revelation 5:9-10 says,**

*9 “And they sang a new song, saying: ‘You are worthy to take the scroll, and to open its seals; For*

*You were slain, and have redeemed us to God by Your blood out of every tribe and tongue and people and nation,*

*10 And have made us kings and priests to our God; and we shall reign on the earth.’”*

As each seal of the Scroll is broken open, judgment is executed. Judgment is two sided with God. For those who are consecrated and obedient and are overcoming, judgment is very good news. It means that Satan has been judged guilty and we have been judged innocent and set free! It is for our deliverance and the enemy’s destruction.

While I cannot explain all of the disasters and suffering to the very detail in Revelation chapters 6-18, I can say that they represent God’s judgments that are setting us free. The trouble is, so many of us feel these judgments and we feel like God has forgotten about us. We can feel like we are just victims, when in fact we are being delivered by all of this trouble. We just need to see it from God’s viewpoint.

Remember, as these disasters take place, you are only feeling their potential, but Jesus is holding your Scroll, and He is being pierced with your curse. He bore your curse and the penalties thereof.

**The mystery of the resurrection life in us. The purpose of resurrection is to bear fruit.**

**Colossians 1:20 says,**

*20 “and by Him to reconcile all things to Himself, by Him, whether things on earth or things in heaven, having made peace through the blood of His cross.”*

This verse says that all things (meaning all bad things and enemies) can be made a friend through the blood of Jesus. In other words, all curses can be made into a blessing. Our vocation here on earth is to “overcome” all evil in our realm of influence. That includes all generational curses, all evil due to our own sin, and from the sin that the world and Satan throws at

us. If the resurrected Christ lives in you, then He is able to convert every bad thing that comes your way into a major blessing.

***However, this overcoming affects more people than just you.***

**Luke 11:21-22 says,**

*21 “When a strong man, fully armed, guards his own palace, his goods are in peace.*

*22 But when a stronger than he comes upon him and overcomes him, he takes from him all his armor in which he trusted, and divides his spoils.”*

The “strong man” that is attacking you holds others in captivity as well. When you overcome “him,” then those others are also set free. This has occurred to my wife and I more than once, and actually has become a common occurrence. We know it is real!

**Our blood covenant mandate. The three main things to observe.**

**Revelation 12:11 says,**

*11 “And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony, and they did not love their lives to the death.”*

Here are the “The Big Three”: His Cross, your cross, and words against the covenant breaker, Satan. Throughout this book we have mentioned the overcoming lifestyle, which is:

1. Continually seek out Scripture about His Cross, or what Jesus accomplished at His death and resurrection.
2. Continually submit yourself to God for His inspection and allow Him to convict you of those traits that are not His.
3. Continually speak the Word against Satan and for the promises of God.

You might say, “I have not done that in my life, it must be too late, I might as well give up.” No, no! Paul said in Romans chapter 7 that he always fought against his flesh and old nature. However, then in Romans chapter 8 he went on to say that it is

never too late, that there is no final judgment, or condemnation, for those who walk in the spirit and not in the flesh; meaning that we always have time to repent and be cleansed.

**Your attitude determines your outcome.**

**The following is a quote from John Richard Wimber.**

*Sacrifice releases power. The greater the sacrifice the greater the power released.*

Do you have challenges, afflictions, yes even sufferings? If you choose to resent them, they will destroy you. However, if you choose to convert them to sacrifices, you will overcome them and turn them into power not only for yourself, but also for the Kingdom of God to set others free. It's all in your attitude. Don't waste them!

**John 12:24 says,**

*24 "Most assuredly, I say to you, unless a grain of wheat falls into the ground and dies, it remains alone; but if it dies, it produces much grain."*

**Luke 23:46 says,**

*46 "And when Jesus had cried out with a loud voice, He said, "Father, 'into Your hands I commit My spirit.'" Having said this, He breathed His last."*

No one took Jesus' life, He laid it down. He turned His affliction into a sacrifice.

**John 10:18 says,**

*18 "No one takes it from Me, but I lay it down of Myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This command I have received from My Father."*

**The final results.**

Finally, in Revelation chapters 18 and 19 we begin to see the world system fall, not only the one time in history when it will fall, but also the system that has kept you and me in bondage for

so long. As we stand in the overcoming process, we see our enemies defeated.

In Revelation chapter 19 we see Jesus coming to rescue us on His white horse, and we see other saints, maybe you and me riding with Him rescuing others. We see the marriage supper of the Lamb, which speaks of a greater bride-like intimacy with Jesus, after we have endured so much.

Then, in chapter 20 we see the devil, who has been deceiving the unbelievers, chained and disabled. I see that as a picture of the spiritual authority we have gained during the overcoming. Then, we see in chapters 21 and 22 the glory of the Kingdom of God, which is more real to us now since we have overcome. Revelation 22:2 speaks of ministry.

**Revelation 22:2 says,**

2 *“In the middle of its street, and on either side of the river, was the tree of life, which bore twelve fruits, each tree yielding its fruit every month. The leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations (nations, meaning gentiles, or unbelievers).”*

**Notice the ministry we partake in after overcoming.**

In Revelation chapter 21, God showed John the Kingdom of God and its foundation, which consisted of many types of jewels. I submit that each time we go through an overcoming process, that we place another jewel into the Kingdom. Thus, little by little, we displace and defeat Satan’s kingdom and build God’s Kingdom.

Finally, Jesus said, “Blessed is he who reads and those who hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written in it; for the time is near” (Revelation 1:3).

In Watchman Nee’s devotion titled A Table in the Wilderness,<sup>27</sup> he says,

*“I, Jesus, have sent My angel to testify to you these things in the churches. I am the Root and the*

---

<sup>27</sup> Nee, Watchman, *A Table in the Wilderness, Daily Meditations*, Wheaton, IL; Tyndale House Publishers. Fort Washington, Pennsylvania; Christian Literature Crusade. p.p. May 19

*“Offspring of David, the Bright and Morning Star”  
(Revelation 22:16).*

*The book of the Revelation is the unveiling, the apokalupis, of Jesus Christ. It draws aside the curtain to reveal him. Its object is not primarily to enlighten us regarding coming events - the antichrist, the supposed revival of the Roman empire, the rapture of the saints, the millennial kingdom or the final downfall of Satan. John’s remedy of our ills is not a matter of so many seals and trumpets and vials. It is not in fact designed to satisfy our intellectual curiosity at all, but to meet our spiritual need by revealing Christ Jesus himself in fullness, that we may know him. For Christ is the answer to all our questions. Get clear first about him, and we shall know all we need to know about ‘things to come.’ He is the risen and victorious King of kings. All the events that follow are the outcome of his being that.*

When challenges in life look like they will overwhelm you, remember, even if they get worse before they get better, the Lamb is there and so is the Lion. He was before the mess in your life, and He is in it with you, and He will be there with you when it is all over.

Consider, as too few people do, what will happen at your death when you finally see the Lord face to face. He may ask you how you responded to the challenges in life. Was it in faith, or in fear and despair? “And now, little children, abide in Him, that when He appears, we may have confidence and not be ashamed before Him at His coming” (1 John 2:28).

See the Lamb, see the Lion.



## Chapter 22

### Isaiah Chapter 53

**Throughout this book we have shown many examples of the blood covenant.**

We have looked at it from so many perspectives. Now in this final chapter we are simply allowing the Scriptures from Isaiah chapter 53 to speak for themselves about the wonder and mystery of the blood covenant.

Psalm 25 states that God reveals the secret of the covenant to those who fear Him. A Biblical mystery is an issue that has been hidden for people who meet certain qualifications. I believe the primary qualification to see the mystery of the blood of Jesus is the condition of your heart. Have an open heart, a heart of forgiveness, repentance for your disobedience, an *honest heart* to confess your sin and pain to the Lord, keep a watch on your mouth and your words, and then watch Him disclose the mystery to you that will change your life.

**We conclude this book by giving you a self-study opportunity to study one of the most amazing chapters in the Bible, Isaiah 53. This chapter certainly has the “blood of Jesus” embedded solidly in it.**

Here are the wonderful eternal Messianic Scriptures from Isaiah chapter 53. This is designed for you, the reader, to simply read the Scripture, and as you read a word formatted with bold letters and showing a footnote, go to that footnote on the pages following and receive the detailed definition and meaning. Ask God to apply these meanings to your life and ask Him to shed light on this truth.

**Isaiah 53:1-12 (Amplified Bible with the Hebrew definitions)<sup>1</sup> says,**

*1 “WHO HAS believed (trusted in, relied upon, and clung to) our message [of that which was revealed to us]? And to whom has the arm of the Lord been disclosed?*

*2 For [the Servant of God] grew up before Him like a tender plant, and like a root out of dry ground; He has no form or comeliness [royal, kingly pomp],*

that we should look at Him, and no beauty that we should desire Him.

3 He was **despised**<sup>ii</sup> and **rejected**<sup>iii</sup> and forsaken by men, a Man of sorrows and pains, and acquainted with **grief**<sup>iv</sup> and sickness; and like One from Whom men hide their faces He was despised, and we did not appreciate His worth or have any esteem for Him.

4 Surely He has **borne**<sup>v</sup> our griefs (sicknesses, weaknesses, and distresses) and carried our sorrows and pains [of punishment], yet we [ignorantly] considered Him **stricken**<sup>vi</sup>, **smitten**<sup>vii</sup>, and **afflicted**<sup>viii</sup> by God [as if with leprosy].

5 But He was **wounded**<sup>ix</sup> for our **transgressions**<sup>x</sup>, He was **bruised**<sup>xi</sup> for our guilt and **iniquities**<sup>xii</sup>; the **chastisement**<sup>xiii</sup> [needful to obtain] **peace**<sup>xiv</sup> and well-being for us was upon Him, and with the **stripes**<sup>xv</sup> [that wounded] Him we are **healed**<sup>xvi</sup> and made whole.

6 All we like sheep have gone astray, we have turned every one to his own way; and the Lord has made to light (**laid**<sup>xvii</sup>) upon Him the guilt and iniquity of us all.

7 He was **oppressed**<sup>xviii</sup>, [yet when] He was afflicted, He was submissive and opened not His mouth; like a lamb that is led to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so He opened not His mouth.

8 By oppression and **judgment**<sup>xix</sup> He was taken away; and as for His generation, who among them considered that He was **cut off**<sup>xx</sup> out of the land of the living [stricken to His death] for the transgression of my [Isaiah's] people, to whom the stroke was due?

9 And they assigned Him a grave with the wicked, and with a rich man in His death, although He had done no violence, neither was any deceit in His mouth.

10 Yet it was the will of the Lord to **bruise**<sup>xxi</sup> Him; He has put Him to grief and made Him sick. When

*You and He make His life an offering for **sin**<sup>xxii</sup> [and He has risen from the dead, in time to come], He shall see His [spiritual] offspring, He shall prolong His days, and the will and pleasure of the Lord shall prosper in His hand.*

*11 He shall see [the fruit] of the **travail**<sup>xxiii</sup> of His soul and be satisfied; by His knowledge of Himself [which He possesses and imparts to others] shall My [uncompromisingly] righteous One, My Servant, justify many and make many righteous (upright and in right standing with God), for He shall **bear**<sup>xxiv</sup> their iniquities and their guilt [with the consequences, says the Lord].*

*12 Therefore will I divide Him a portion with the great [kings and rulers], and He shall divide the spoil with the mighty, because He poured out His life unto death, and [He let Himself] be regarded as a criminal and be numbered with the transgressors; yet He bore (**bare**<sup>xxv</sup>) [and took away] the sin of many and made intercession for the transgressors (the rebellious).”*

*Reproduction, resale or internet posting prohibited*

## Appendix A Relationship Skills

### **Relationship Disciplines and Skills.**

The following are seven important relationship disciplines and skills that we can practice to keep in close intimacy with the Lord. We covered this in previous chapters, however, here we are amplifying them with more detail. For a complete teaching on this subject you may study “The Flowing River” lesson available at [www.isob-bible.org/flowingriver.htm](http://www.isob-bible.org/flowingriver.htm).

**1. It is your choice. Make a firm decision to pursue the relationship.** Offer yourself completely to God. Read Romans 12:1-2. This is our blood covenant response to a mighty blood covenant offered to us by God. Take up your cross, or in other words, your “burnt offering.”

**2. We need first to take time to talk to God.** Our first line of talking should be our true gut-level honesty. It should be at the Cross, dumping our sins, carnality, and all our feelings and emotions on Him. In chapter 13 of this book, we looked at several different types of slavery. You can only be free if you admit your bondage and call it your enemy. Only truth can make you free.

In the First Epistle to the Corinthians Paul says that we now keep the Passover by unadulterated honesty and truth. The Hebrews needed to pack their bags and rush out of Egypt, which is to say that we need to turn our back on the things of this world.

**1 Corinthians 5:7-8 (Amplified Bible) says,**

*7 “Purge (clean out) the old leaven that you may be fresh (new) dough, still uncontaminated [as you are], for Christ, our Passover [Lamb], has been sacrificed.*

*8 Therefore, let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, nor with leaven of vice and malice and wickedness, but with the unleavened [bread] of purity (nobility, honor) and sincerity and [unadulterated] truth.”*

***We need to apply the Passover blood just as the Hebrews did.***

In this time of truth, make sure you forgive as well as be forgiven. You will never be free without forgiveness going in both directions!

### **3. Thanksgiving.**

**Psalm 100:4** says,

*4 “Enter into His gates with thanksgiving, and into His courts with praise. Be thankful to Him, and bless His name.”*

Times of worship through thanksgiving is important, as the Holy Spirit loves to make Himself real during these times. We do indeed enter into a place closer to the Holy of Holies, or the very manifest presence of God, when we enter with thanksgiving. I can give thanks for the good things very easily, but I believe that the Lord is deeply touched when we show Him that we do not take those good things for granted.

I can give thanks in the midst of difficult and challenging times because I know that I have the victory as I overcome and turn these challenges into a blessing.

**4. We need to take time to listen.** We need to be in daily Bible studies and/or readings. Teaching through various audio and media materials from trusted ministers can be very valuable. One of my favorites is Dr. Mark Rutland. We need to surround our minds and hearts with hearing the Word in as many ways as possible. When I first met Jesus, I would spend five or so hours a day in the Word. It had a profound impact on my life and delivered me from so many bondages, impossible circumstances, and demons that they are too numerous to list. I did not know what the bondages were or that I was even in bondage. As I would soak in the Word, obey Him, and consistently turn from sin, as He would show me, the chains would fall off by the multitudes.

***The Word is supernatural.***

It is alive and active. It is a seed that will bear fruit for you and for God's glory. The more time you spend in the Word the more prosperous your soul will be, and that will bring every type of prosperity!

**5. Then you again need to take time to speak.** However, this time you need to speak His Word, the Word upon which you have been meditating. When you meditate upon the Word and then speak it out, it is powerful. You hear it, God hears it, and Satan hears it. When Satan hears it, he does not see you, he sees only Jesus, the Word, who conquered him.

***Jesus is the High Priest over our confessions.*** When the Word of God is confessed and prayed over a person or a situation, it is powerful! Jesus created everything by His Word. Jesus IS the Word. Jesus gave us the authority to use the Word as if it were He saying it!

**John 1:1-3 says,**

*1 "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.*

*2 He was in the beginning with God.*

*3 All things were made through Him, and without Him nothing was made that was made."*

When the Passover was administered to Israel in Exodus 12, the Israelites were told to put the blood of an innocent lamb over their doors and the death angel (demon) would "pass over" and not hurt them. Jesus is the Lamb of God, and we can put His blood over our doors and over the doors of our loved ones and those that we pray for. How?

***The words of our mouth will apply the blood.*** Notice in Exodus 12 that as long as the lamb's blood stayed in the basin, it did no good. But when they took the hyssop, dipped it in the blood and applied to their doors, then God and the devil could see it. The hyssop was a common weed, which did not seem to have much value. The words of our mouth do not seem to have much value, but when we dip them into the Word of God (Who is Jesus Himself) and apply them as blood, God sees it and the devil sees it!

Jesus takes our confession and makes it powerful.

When we speak God's Word, Jesus takes it to the Father and asks Him to perform it.

**Hebrews 3:1 says,**

*1 “Therefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the Apostle and High Priest of our confession, Christ Jesus.”*

***Then, we can enter into rest and let the Word do the work.***

**Hebrews 4:1 says,**

*1 “Therefore, since a promise remains of entering His rest, let us fear lest any of you seem to have come short of it.”*

His work was finished from the foundation of the earth, therefore we can believe.

**Hebrews 4:3 (KJV) says,**

*3 “For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.”*

**Hebrews 4:12 says,**

*12 “For the word of God is living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.”*

***Angels go to work*** when they hear God’s Word.

**Psalm 103:20 says,**

*20 “Bless the LORD, you His angels, who excel in strength, who do His word, heeding the voice of His word.”*

***Demons flee!***

**Psalm 149:5-9 says,**

*5 “Let the saints be joyful in glory; let them sing aloud on their beds.*

*6 Let the high praises of God be in their mouth,  
and a two-edged sword in their hand,*

*7 to execute vengeance on the nations and  
punishments on the peoples (representing our spiritual  
enemies);*

*8 to bind their kings with chains, and their nobles  
with fetters of iron;*

*9 to execute on them the written judgment – this  
honor have all His saints. Praise the LORD!”*

**5. Obey God.** Ask God to give you something simple, something small every day that you may obey. This is a big thing! John 14:21-23.

**6. Communion.** Take communion on a regular basis. Many people take it daily.

**7. Stay in fellowship.** It is important to be in fellowship with strong Bible-believing, Spirit-filled believers, for refreshing and encouragement.

**Keep your relationship alive and well, especially when you do not feel like it.**

*Reproduction, resale or internet posting prohibited*



---

## End notes

### 'So why did Jesus make wine?

Here is my own personal opinion. I learned most of it from Dr. Carl Baugh, a Spirit-filled scientist.

He said that before the flood in Noah's time, there was a firmament over the earth, which was an invisible globe made up of some sort of matter that kept the harmful rays of the sun from destroying things. It also had a metallic and crystal content that reflected the songs that the angels sang to the people on earth. It was like God's boom box! It had several other jobs. But at the flood this broke.

One of the things that the firmament prevented was the fermentation or death process of fruit. This fermentation is what creates alcohol. The alcohol does have some benefits like killing of germs, and in Bible days they would mix a little wine with some water for purification. But the priests who would minister in the presence of God were not allowed to drink any wine.

Notice, after the flood, Noah got drunk. I do not believe he did this on purpose; I feel like he was not aware of what happened.

I feel in the New Earth, that Jesus will give us the New Wine again, or the kind that does not have alcohol. This is different than grape juice, but it is something that we cannot imagine because we are living in a different earth now. I also believe that this original wine, and the New Wine, is very tasty and healthy, but it does not have alcohol. Alcohol is made from a death process called fermentation and death is not from God.

In my opinion, the wine Jesus made that day was the wine of the new Kingdom of God, which is similar to the wine in the days before the flood. Before the flood the wine had no alcohol content (in my opinion) because fermentation, which was required, was not in existence as yet. Look at John 2:4 which demonstrates that this wine was indeed different.

John 2:10 (Amplified Bible) says,

---

10 “And said to him, *Everyone else serves his best wine first, and when people have drunk freely, then he serves that which is not so good; but you have kept back the good wine until now!*”

**Winkey Pratney on Alcohol. Taken from his article The Daniel Files.**

**DRINKING**

Minimize drug use of *any* kind. Find alternatives to what you have. Needless to say, you certainly cut out all illegal and legal *addictives*. Especially is this true with **alcohol** and **tobacco** of any kind.

More kids die by accident than any other cause of death among teenagers. Over *half* of those deaths are by drunk driving. More boys are murdered than kill themselves; drinking and drugs dominate in the cause of these deaths too. One single drink of alcohol *permanently kills off* an irreplaceable piece of brain.

All alcohols kill. Methyl blinds you as you die. Even a little propyl alcohol lets monsters loose in your body. But ethyl is the only one that kills you slow so you don't notice how you die.

Don't drink; *don't drink at all*. Alcohol (the decayed end-product of rot) not only stuns your ability to think clearly, quickly and remember. Even small amounts knock out your ability to resist disease.

No wonder the Bible says, “*Wine is mocker, strong drink is raging and whoever is deceived by it is not wise.*” (Prov. 20:1; Isa. 5:11, 22; Isa. 28:7) No King's child is to touch alcohol. (Prov. 31:4) Wine is ~~for~~ *not* for no one in ministry (Lev. 10:9); you are to get your bravery, happiness, and loudness from the Holy Spirit! (Eph. 5:18; Acts 2:13)

The only legitimate use of strong drink in the Bible is *to dull the pain of someone who is dying*. (Prov. 31:6) Many kids use it just this same way today. On the cross, Jesus was offered a drug/alcohol mixture; He refused it.

---

## Definitions from Isaiah 53 – Endnotes <sup>i</sup>

<sup>ii</sup> **Despised** - *bazah baw-zaw'* KJV - *despise, contemptible, contemned, disdained, vile person, scorn, hold in contempt despicable, to be vile, worthless, disdain, despise, regard with contempt.*

**Have you ever been despised? Have you ever felt or been considered worthless by another? Have people regarded you with contempt? Have you been so worthless that people simply ignore you and look past you as if you did not exist? Jesus bore that sin for you!**

<sup>iii</sup> **Rejected** - *chadal khaw-dal'* - *cease, forbear, leave, left off, let...alone, endeth, failed, forsake, rest, unoccupied, wanteth, non translated variant, to stop, cease, desist, forego, cease to be, leave undone.*

**Have you ever been rejected? Did you have a father figure, either in your life or in your past generations that did not fulfill his role? Did you have an addict as a father, or did your father simply check out of your life? Jesus bore that for you! That actually happened to him on your behalf.**

<sup>iv</sup> **Grief** - *ylx choliy khol-ee'* - *sickness 12, disease 7, grief, sick, sickness, be weak, be diseased, travail, grievous, infirmity, make suit; to be or become weak, be or become sick, be or become diseased, be or become grieved, be or become sorry, to be made sick, to be tired (1c1) to make oneself sick, to show signs of sickness, to be wounded.*

**Have you ever been sick in your body? Did you inherit a disease? Jesus bore that for you! Stand on that fact!**

<sup>v</sup> **Borne** - *asn nasa' naw-saw'* - *or (bare, left, etc...) up, bear, take, bare, carry 30 (take, carry) away, borne, armourbearer, forgive, accept, exalt, regard obtained, respect, to lift, bear up, carry, take, to lift, lift up to bear, carry, support, sustain, endure to take, take away, to be taken away, be carried*

---

off, be swept away carry off, bear continuously forgive, to cause one to bear (iniquity).

**Jesus has borne the sin perpetrated against you and by you.**

<sup>vi</sup> **Stricken** - *naga` naw-gah'* - touch, came, reach, bring, near, smite, nigh, plagued, happeneth, strike, beaten, cast, reach up, brought down, join, laid, get up; to touch, reach, strike, to be stricken, be defeated, to be stricken (by disease), to befall (of fate).

**Have you ever been beaten down by life, by an employer, by a spouse or parent? Has your life been one defeat after another? Jesus was defeated for you, but He rose from the dead to give you the victory!**

<sup>vii</sup> **Smitten** - *nakah naw-kaw'* - smite, slay, kill, beat, slaughter, stricken, given, wounded, strike, stripes, to strike, smite, hit, beat, slay, kill, to smite, strike, beat, scourge, clap, applaud, give a thrust, to smite, attack, attack and destroy, conquer, subjugate, ravage, to smite, chastise, send judgment upon, punish, destroy, to smite, kill, slay (man or beast), (fatally) smitten, be killed, be slain, to be attacked and captured, to be smitten (with disease), to be blighted (of plants), to receive a blow.

**What type of punishment, deserved or undeserved, have you experienced in your life? Jesus took that punishment so that you could be victorious. He took your captivity to drugs, porno, performance, perfectionism, and other prisons so that you could go free!**

<sup>viii</sup> **Afflicted** - *`anah aw-naw'* - a primitive root [possibly rather through the idea of looking down or browbeating]; afflict, humble, force, exercised, sing, troubled, weakened, to afflict, oppress, humble, be afflicted, be bowed down, to be **depressed**, be downcast, to humble oneself, bow down, to humble, mishandle, afflict.

---

**Depression is common to many people. Have you ever felt afflicted with depression? Jesus took that punishment to give you joy!**

<sup>ix</sup> **Wounded** - *chahal khaw-lal'* [the root word of a bread used by Jewish people the Friday night that begins the Saturday Sabbath] - begin, profane, pollute, defile, break, wounded, eat, slay, first, gather grapes, inheritance, began men, piped, players, **prostitute**, sorrow, stain, eat as common things, to profane oneself, defile oneself, pollute oneself, to treat as common, to **violate (a covenant)**, to violate the honour of, to profane, defile, pollute, desecrate, begin, dishonour sexually, to profane (name of God), to wound (fatally), bore through, pierce, bore, to pierce, to be slain, to wound, pierce, to play the flute or pipe.

**Has your life been one of profane pollution? Have you been dishonored sexually or have you been one who has abused others sexually? Jesus bore your sin, going in both directions.**

<sup>x</sup> **Transgressions** - *pesha` peh'-shah* - transgression, trespass, sin, rebellion; transgression (against individuals), transgression (nation against nation), transgression (against God), punishment for transgression.

**Have you ever been rebellious? Do you have rebellious children? Jesus took the punishment for the rebellious. Just believe and you will see miracles.**

<sup>xi</sup> **Bruised** - *daka` daw-kaw'* - break, break in pieces, crush, bruise, destroy, contrite, smite, oppress, beat to pieces, humble, to crush, be crushed, be contrite, be broken, to allow oneself to be crushed.

**Has life crushed you? Do you feel like you have been bruised and beat to pieces by life? Jesus bore this for you.**

<sup>xii</sup> **Iniquities** - *`avon aw-vone'*, or *Nwwe `avown (aw-vone')* - punishment, fault, mischief, sin; perversity, depravity, iniquity, guilt or punishment of iniquity, consequence of or punishment for

---

*iniquity, wickedly, crooked, perverted, troubled, bowed down, to bend, twist, distort, be twisted.*

**The passing down of generational sin, the consequence of sin passed down to the children. A liability.**

<sup>xiii</sup> **Chastisement** - *rowm muwcar moo-sawr'* - *instruction, correction, chasten, check, bond, discipline, doctrine, discipline, chastening, correction.*

**Hebrews 12 states that as we are disciplined, holiness, or God's character is developed, and that brings on peace, one of the fruits of righteousness.**

<sup>xiv</sup> **Peace** - *mwlv shalown shaw-lome'* - *well, welfare, salute, prosperity, safe, health, completeness, soundness, welfare, peace, completeness (in number), safety, soundness (in body), peace, quiet, tranquility, contentment welfare, health, prosperity, peace, friendship, of human relationships, with God especially in covenant relationship, peace (from war).*

**The presence of God brings peace into your life, through the Word and the Holy Spirit, no matter what circumstances are occurring in your life. Only He can do this because He bore the chastening needed to obtain this peace. It is supernatural, but often we must press in and strive to reach His presence.**

<sup>xv</sup> **Stripes** - *chabbuwrah khab-boo-raw'* - *stripe, hurt, wounds, blueness, bruise, bruise, stripe, wound, blow.*

<sup>xvi</sup> **Healed** - *rapha' raw-faw'* - *heal, physician, cure, repaired, to heal, make healthful, healer, physician (of men), of individual distresses, of personal distress, of national defects or hurts, of hurts of nations involving restored favour in order to get healed.*

<sup>xvii</sup> **Laid** - *07495 apr rapha' raw-faw'* - *heal, physician, cure, repaired, to heal, of individual distresses make healthful, of national hurts, in order to get healed.*

---

<sup>xviii</sup> **Oppressed** - *nagas naw-gas'* - oppressor, taskmasters, exact, distressed, oppressed, driver, exactors, taxes, to press, drive, oppress, exact, exert demanding pressure, driver, taskmaster, ruler, oppressor, tyrant, lord, exactor of tribute (participle), to be hard pressed.

**When oppression hits our minds, we can stand on this, that Jesus was oppressed for us.**

<sup>xix</sup> **Judgment** - *jpvm mishpat mish-pawt'* - act of deciding a case, place, court, seat of judgment, sentence, decision (of judgment), process, procedure, litigation (before judges), final sentence.

**We have no condemnation, which is final judgment, when we walk with the Holy Spirit.**

<sup>xx</sup> **Cut off** - *cut off, divide, decree, cut down, snatch, to cut off, destroy, exterminate, to be decreed, to be destroyed, cut off, to be cut off, separated, excluded.*

**Jesus was separated from the Father at the Cross so that we could be joined to our Father. Most people have had less than perfect father relationships. Even the best of fathers fall short in some areas. Any degree of a broken “father bridge” brings rejection. Jesus bore that rejection.**

<sup>xxi</sup> **Bruise** - *egn nega` neh'-gah* - plague, sore, stroke, stripes, stroke, plague, disease, mark, plague spot stricken, wound, stroke (metaphorical of disease), mark (of leprosy).

**A bruise is an inner wound that bleeds on the inside, but shows a black and blue mark on the outside. This is a picture of inner wounds that need healing. The outer manifestations are not the problem, the inner bruise needs healing.**

<sup>xxii</sup> **Sin** - *'asham aw-shawm'* - not only sin, but the word also indicates the restitution needed for the sin, offering for sin, compensation (for offense), guilt, guiltiness, trespass offering.

---

**Not only is our sin removed, but also the consequences that it brings.**

<sup>.xiii</sup> **Travail** - `amal aw-mawl' - labour, mischief, misery, travail, trouble, sorrow, grievance, grievousness, iniquity, miserable, pain, painful, perverseness, toil, wearisome, wickedness, toil, trouble, labour, trouble.

<sup>.xiv</sup> **Bear** - verse 11 cabal saw-bal' - carry, bear, labour, burden, bear a load, drag oneself along, to make oneself a burden, drag oneself along.

<sup>.xv</sup> **Bare** - ajx chet' khate - guilt for sin, punishment for sin, reconciliation, purge, cleanse, incur guilt, forfeit, purify from uncleanness, incur guilt, incur penalty by sin, forfeit, to bring into guilt or condemnation or punishment for sin, miss the goal or path of right and duty, purify, to make a sin-offering.

**These words bear and bare indicate that these horrible things that were meant for you and due to you actually pierced Jesus and that He took them away so that you would not have to bear them. Remember, this is by virtue of the blood.**

*Reproduction, resale or internet posting prohibited*